

A Systematic Theology for the 21st Century – Anthropology, Hamartiology and Soteriology

Dr. Edward Rice

A Systematic Theology
for the 21st Century -
Anthropology,
Hamartiology and
Soteriology

Dr. Edward Rice

Copyright: Creative Commons Attribution 2.0

"Share — copy and redistribute the material in any medium or format, and Adapt — remix, transform, and build upon the material for any purpose, even commercially."

Published by

Good Samaritan Baptist Church GSBaptistChurch.com

54 Main St.. Box 99, Dresden, NY 14441

<http://stores.lulu.com/GSBaptistChurch>

Cover Design and Photographs by:

Edward G. Rice

Principle Scripture Quotations are from the non-copyright

King James Authorized Version

About the Author

Pastor Ed Rice is a retired USAF Systems Engineer surrendered to be a Baptist Preacher of the Gospel of Jesus Christ. Saved in 1960 at the age of eight he grew up tutored in the Scriptures through Tuscorora Baptist Church in Addison NY, where he married his high-school sweetheart Beverly Cook Rice. Drafted into the military off of the dairy farm in 1972, Ed and Bev Rice raised 3 boys while serving as a Missile Technician in the USAF. After completing a USAF AECP bootstrap program he graduated from Ohio State University with a degree in electrical engineering and was commissioned in the USAF where he served until 1995 as a systems engineer and weapons integration specialist at Wright Patterson Air Force Base, Ohio, and Rome Laboratories, Rome NY. He finished his Masters degree in Electrical Engineering through The Air Force Institute of Technology in 1990.

After being commissioned as a USAF officer in 1982 he pursued his systems engineering work in several classified research and development programs. While moving around the USA in his twenty three year military career he was a youth pastor and associate pastor in Independent Baptist Churches near his station. In 1995 he became Captain Rice, USAF retired, and surrendered to be a Baptist Pastor.

In 1998 he took the senior pastorate at Good Samaritan Baptist Church, in Dresden, New York where he pursued his theological studies at Louisiana Baptist Theological Seminary. At LBU Pastor Rice received his second masters degree in 2013, and his PhD in 2017. His son Michael is US Army retired living near Fort Hood Texas, Shane is an Independent Baptist Missionary pastoring Chiesa Biblica Battista, Mazara Del Vallo, Italy, and Matthew is serving our Lord Jesus Christ near Hamilton NY. Capt Rice has spent seven years teaching math and science with the ABeka Christian High School Curriculum, and seven years teaching college mathematics, a love of his life, at both Corning Community College, and Elmira College.

Dr. Rice's staunch belief in the preserved accuracy of the inspired Scriptures and his extensive background in systems engineering make him uniquely qualified to assemble "A Systematic Theology for the 21st Century."

Personal Testimony of Pastor Edward Rice.

I was saved in 1960 at the age of eight. My father and mother were saved and founding members of Fellowship Baptist Church in Gang Mills New York. In 1958 my dad, Levi O. Rice, an agnostic, was invited by Cecil Palm to be a founding member of that church; both of my parents were born-again-saved two weeks later. My mother, Doris was converted from Roman Catholicism, and became a Christian. She stopped her Roman penance and practiced Bible repentance, stopped praying to Mary and called upon the Lord Jesus Christ to save her. She was thus converted from Roman Catholicism to the Lord Jesus Christ. Everyone needs converted from something. Mom and Dad were now born again, and two years later I was saved in revival services with Evangelist Dale and Opel Linbaugh. Opel cut the flannel graph burden of sin off little Christian's back in her Pilgrim's Progress presentation, and I was born-again-saved before it hit the basement floor. In 1995 I retired from the USAF as a systems engineer and became an ordained Baptist Preacher of the Gospel of the Lord Jesus Christ. "Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven" (Matt 18:3). Being converted is quite like a new birth, Jesus said so. If you have not been converted you should trust Christ today, and you must tell him that that is your intent. (see Romans 10:9-13).

Table of Contents

A Systematic Theology for the 21st Century – Anthropology.	
Hamartiology and Soteriology.....	1
Preface.....	1
Part 06 Anthropology.....	5
Chapter 1 Introduction.....	5
Chapter 2 Cambron's Chap IV Anthropology -The Doctrine of Man ...	8
I. Man In His State of Integrity.....	9
II. Man In His State of Sin.....	18
III. Man In His State of Grace.....	23
Chapter 3 A Six Day Creation	29
Six Days With No Evolution.....	33
Six Days With No Gap.....	36
Six Days, No Gap, No Half-breed Angels But a Depraved Humanity.....	44
Chapter 4 The Depravity of Man.....	46
Chapter 5 The Seven Dispensations for Mankind.....	54
Chapter 6 Critique of Other Systematic Theology – Anthropologies. .	63
Critique of Chafer's Anthropology.....	63
Critique of Chafers Material/Immaterial Part of Man	69
Critique of Chafer's State of Innocence and Fall.....	70
A Critique of Augustus H. Strong's 1907 Systematic Theology – Anthropology.	72
Chapter 7 Anthropology Conclusion	75
Bibliography for Anthropology.....	77
Part 07 Hamartiology.....	79
Cambron's Chapter V Hamartiology -The Doctrine of Sin	81
I. The Origin of Sin	82
II. The Reality of Sin	82
III. The Nature of Sin	83
IV. The Extent of Sin	86
V. The Realm of Sin	87
VI. The Penalty of Sin	88
Critique of Dr. Chafer's Hamartiology Chapters XVII – XXIV (224 – 373).....	90
Part 08 Soteriology.....	94
Chapter 1 Soteriology Introduction.....	94
Chapter 2 Soteriology from a Bible Doctrine.....	95
Cambron's Ch VI Soteriology - The Doctrine of Salvation.....	96
I. Repentance.....	97
III. Regeneration.....	101

IV. Justification.....	104
V. Sanctification.....	106
VI. Adoption.....	111
VII. Redemption.....	112
VIII. Prayer.....	114
Chapter 3 Understanding The Biblical New Birth Clarifies Doctrines about Sacraments, Election, and Perseverance of Saints.....	122
I Introduction.....	123
Purpose	124
Approach.....	124
II A Biblical Model of the New Birth.....	125
III The Instantaneous Transaction of Conversion.....	129
IV The Instantaneous Transaction of Regeneration.....	134
V The Instantaneous Transaction of Justification.....	136
VI The Instantaneous Baptism Into Christ.....	138
VII The Instantaneous Indwelling of The Holy Spirit.....	141
VIII The conflict with our philosophy of Sacraments.....	142
IX The conflict with the philosophy of Calvinism	145
X The conflict with the philosophy of Armenianism	148
XI Conclusion	150
XII What did Calvin Think About The Order of Justification and Regeneration	153
Imputed Righteousness.....	159
Semi-Pelagianism and Pelagianism.....	161
So Great Salvation Insights.....	162
Msg #1352 The Rip-Tide of Sin.....	162
Msg #1411 Christ is the Answer, 4 Good, Bad & Ugly.....	163
Msg #1412 Compromise NOT, Confederate NEVER.....	164
Critique of other Systematic Theology Soteriology Works.....	166
Critique of John Miley's 1892 Methodist Soteriology	166
Critique of Charles Hodge's 1878 Soteriology.....	172
Critique of Augustus Strong's 1907 Soteriology.....	172
Critique of Theisens' 1949 Soteriology.....	172
Critique of Geisler's 2002 Soteriology	172
Critique of Chafer's Volume III Soteriology Introduction.....	173
Dallas Theological Seminary President successor Praises Chafer's Work....	175
Troublesome Independent Fundamental Baptist's Leaning Toward Chafer.....	178
Dr. DaveT's Comments & Response.....	181
Critique of Chafer's Vol. III Soteriology Chap. II.....	185
Critique of Chafer's Vol. III Soteriology Chap. III - VII.....	189
Critique of Chafer's Vol. III Soteriology Chap. VIII - XX.....	192
Critique of Chafer's Vol. III Soteriology Conclusion	197
Calvinism and Reformed Theology is the Gateway to Diabolical Error	198
Critique of Arthur W. Pink's "Present Day Evangelism".....	202

Soteriology Conclusion204
Bibliography206

Preface

Greetings in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ.

*Man that is in honour, and understandeth not,
is like the beasts that perish. Psalm 49:20¹*

There is no Baptist Systematic Theology work in print today, i.e. there is no Systematic Theology work that has the inerrant, infallible, verbally inspired word of God as its sole authority. There ought to be. There is a cause. Baptists, by definition, have the inerrant, infallible, inspired Holy Bible as their sole authority for all faith and practice. They should have a systematic theology book that does as well.

You are solicited to join in a five year theological journey which will end with a “Systematic Theology for the 21st Century.” The only fare is that you review the work as it is being assembled. All critiques will be welcomed and any born again believer is fully qualified to construct, and certainly to critique, such a work. A systematic theology is simply drawing a circle around the Holy Bible, and then rationally considering every principle, concept and thought that has been revealed to man by God. It shall be exhaustive, but in this venue, with your help, it need not be exhausting.

The reward for your participation will be a copy of the completed work. But that will barely compare with the benefit we each gain in assembling such a work.

The Cause: As a systems engineer for thirty years (since 1972), I focused on systems analysis. Systematic theology has intrigued me ever since my first Bible institute course in 1975. I have amassed multiple systematic theology books and never found one that is wholly Biblical. This year, 2013, seminary work at Louisiana Baptist Theological Seminary, under Dr. Steven Pettey, assigned me to read and analyze six volumes of “Systematic Theology” by

1 The Holy Bible

Lewis Sperry Chafer, the founder and previous president of Dallas Theological Seminary. Initial critique of this neo-evangelical, voluminous, wordy, often unorganized work, answered the question, "Is there not a cause?" A Systematic Theology for the 21st Century is indeed a valid need. It cries out to be written and it is a work that I must needs endeavor.

Immediately there are three principle flaws that need to be overhauled in previous works. Previous systematic theologies spend effort systematizing creeds, Roman dogma, philosophies, and "everything that man ever believed about God," rather than the systematization of Bible revelation. Current systematic theologies follow the deceived definition of Dr. Chafer who states that a systematic theology is an unabridged organized rendition of everything ever believed about God. Where is the sole-authority of the Bible in that? For example, the Westminster confession of faith establishes that God unchangeably decreed every thing that comes to pass... EVERYTHING! And that God decreed it all before the foundation of the world! The Bible is emphatic that Abraham, with his bargaining, Moses, with his intercession, Nineveh, with its repentance, Joash, with his arrows, Hezekiah, with his prayer, and Jesus, with his whosoever(s), each directly changed what God was going to do. Also, IF prayer changes things, so can we! And so can God. One would expect Charles Hodge (1797-1878) to bow to such a Westminster creed, he was a Presbyterian. But when Augustus Strong (1836-1921), an American Baptist minister and Theologian, supports Westminster over the Bible, and Henry C. Thiessen (1883 - 1947), 1947 President of Los Angeles Baptist Theological Seminary, resoundingly supported Westminster over the Bible, and, finally, when Lewis Sperry Chafer, followed suit, it is time to re-write a systematic theology that presents what the Bible reveals over what the creeds state. Present systematic theology works are marred by what the Holy Catholic Church declared as truth. A Biblical one is direly needed.

Secondly, previous systematic theologies spend effort defending philosophies of man and rationality of man rather than systematizing Bible revelation. All the previous listed theologians

spend undo time and effort wrestling with the ontological and teleological proof that there is a God. The Bible spends no effort in such vain philosophies of man. Also, Thiessen, particularly, expends great effort defending the philosophical and Roman Catholic argument that man is only material and immaterial and NOT body, soul and spirit, i.e. a trichotomy in the image of God. In this error, he even calls Holy Scripture, just Paul's opinion.² Chafer also makes reference to the dichotomy of man, but then later references his trichotomy; again Chafer has proven himself remarkably wordy, unclear, and inconsistent. He wanted to be all things to all denominations, even dispensational at times, but not at the expense of loosing the influential covenant theologians who taught at, and attended, Dallas Theological Seminary.

Lastly Thiessen and Chafer, by their own insistence, have no access to a verbally inspired, inerrant, infallible Holy Bible. They insist that nowhere in the world does such a Bible exist. Both base their systematic theologies on what textual critics, modern translators, and modern scholars thought God meant to say. A true theologian must base all theology on an inerrant, infallible, verbally inspired Holy Bible; it is our sole authority. For Baptists it is the sole authority for all faith and practice, and we have no reliably written Systematic Theology in print. With this effort and your help we will get one in print, at least in eprint. Baptist Bible seminaries, colleges, institutes, and students deserve no less.

Visit www.GSBaptistChurch.com/theology to follow this effort's development.

2 Henry Clarence Thiessen, Lectures in Systematic Theology (Eerdmans, 1949), 226-227.

A Systematic Theology for the 21st Century

A Systematic Theology for the 21st Century

Part 06 Anthropology

Download pdf at www.GSBaptistChurch.com/theology

By Dr. Edward G. Rice,
Pastor Good Samaritan Baptist Church
54 Main St. Box 99, Dresden NY 14441
www.GSBaptistChurch.com

Part 06 Anthropology

Chapter 1 Introduction

And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth. So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them. Genesis 1:26-27³

And the LORD God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul. And the LORD God planted a garden eastward in Eden; and there he put the man whom he had formed. Genesis 2:7-8

Having thoroughly considered the nature of God, we now consider the nature of man. Anthropology is the doctrine of man, or a discourse on human nature⁴, specifically taken from the Greek “*Anthropos*,” for man, and “*ology*” for a discourse of/on. (It has been well stated previous that “*ology*” is so much bigger than *study*, *discourse*, or *doctrine of*, that it might need its own consideration whenever it is used.) In a Biblical systematic theology the discourse will focus on everything God has revealed to us about man in his inerrant, infallible, verbally inspired holy Scriptures. By definition that is adequate coverage of all that needs to be considered about man. The Father of Systematic Theologies, Charles Hodge (1797-1878) develops an idea that God's thorough

3 The Holy Bible.

4 Noah Webster's 1828 Dictionary of American English, s.v. “Anthropology.”

coverage of anthropology is the complete truth as follows:

All that the Scriptures teach concerning the external world accords with the facts of experience. They do not teach that the earth is a plane; that it is stationary in space; that the sun revolves around it. On the other hand, they do teach that God made all plants and animals, each after its own kind; and, accordingly, all experience shows that species are immutable. All the anthropological doctrines of the Bible agree with what we know of man from consciousness and observation. The Bible teaches that God made of one blood all nations which dwell on the face of the earth. We accordingly find that all the varieties of our race have the same anatomical structure; the same physical nature; the same rational and moral faculties. The Bible teaches that man is a free, accountable agent; that all men are sinners; that all need redemption, and that no man can redeem himself or find a ransom for his brother. With these teachings the consciousness of all men agrees. All that the Scriptures reveal concerning the nature and attributes of God corresponds with our religious nature, satisfying, elevating, and sanctifying all our powers and meeting all our necessities. If the contents of the Bible did not correspond with the truths which God has revealed in his external works and the constitution of our nature, it could not be received as coming from Him, for God cannot contradict himself. Nothing, therefore, can be more derogatory to the Bible than the assertion that its doctrines are contrary to reason.⁵

Charles Hodge was a genius with great depth but in his anthropology section he fails to stand by his own assertion here

5 Charles Hodge, “*Systematic Theology*”, Volume III, pg 92 of 916.

that God's Word can be our sole authority for what we understand about man. Instead he spends all his effort defying what we do not believe and then even defending the Roman philosophical teachings of dualism against the Bible's endorsement of man's trichotomy, i.e. body, soul, and spirit. Certainly there are many things about humans that can be explored and studied outside of the Bible, just as there are things to be learned about earth's orbit around the sun in a galaxy called the Milky Way. But in a truly Biblical systematic theology our focus in an anthropology section need only be what God has revealed about man in his inerrant, infallible, verbally inspired Word. The very best basis of anthropology then comes first from consideration of the very best Biblical Doctrine book.

There is no truer, or more thorough, published, Baptist, and Biblical doctrine than that of Dr. Mark G. Cambron.⁶ His teachings on Bible Doctrine at Tennessee Temple Bible School thoroughly lay the foundation for this present work of systematic theology. His book, *Bible Doctrines*⁷ will, with the permission of the Cambron Institute⁸, be given in block quotes throughout this effort. The book is readily available through <http://www.thecambroninstitute.org>, and it forms the foundation for this systematic theology.⁹

6 Dr. Mark G. Cambron, B.A., M.A., Th.B., Th.M., Th.D., D.D., L.L.D., Litt.D., was one of the foremost theologians of our times. Born in Fayetteville, Tennessee on July 31, 1911. He was born-again in 1919. It was during a Billy Sunday campaign in Chattanooga that he trusted in the Lord Jesus Christ as his personal Savior. He served for many years at Tennessee Temple College (1948-59) with Dr. Lee Roberson (1909-2007) the founder of Tennessee Temple University in 1946. Dr. Cambron served as Dean of Tennessee Temple University. From <http://www.thecambroninstitute.org> accessed 10/16/2013

7 Mark G. Cambron, *Bible Doctrines*, 1954, Grand Rapids, Michigan, Zondervan Publishing House, 60-69

8 The Cambron Institute, 35890 Maplegrove Road, Willoughby, Oh 44094

9 It is noted and reproved in the Bibliology section of this work that Dr. Cambron's *Bible Doctrines* book does recommend using the R.V., instead of the Holy Bible, 41 times for 54 Bible verses. This work trusts only the King James Bible for English accuracy and acknowledgment of the inerrant, infallible, verbally inspired Holy Scriptures. There is no reason in the world to trust the ecumenical translators of 1881 to render any of these verses with

Believing in the verbal inspiration of the Holy Scriptures and believing that every single word is directly chosen by God, it is prudent here to preserve and defend the doctrines extracted from Scripture and presented by Dr. Cambron. Below, in a block quote of his book, is his extensive analysis of Anthropology: [block quote of Dr. Cambron's *Bible Doctrines* page 116-134 (Zondervan 155-174)]

Chapter 2 Cambron's Chap IV Anthropology -The Doctrine of Man

Chapter 4

Anthropology - The Doctrine of Man

[pg118]

ANTHROPOLOGY (The Doctrine of Man)

[pg119]

OUTLINE FOR CHAPTER IV

ANTHROPOLOGY

I. Man in His State of Integrity.

A. His Origin.

B. His Nature.

C. His Constitution.

D. His Condition.

E. His Headship.

II. Man in His State of Sin.

F. The Fall of Man.

G. The Fallen Sons of Adam.

III. Man in His State of Grace.

A. His Standing.

B. His State.

C. His Two Natures.

[pg120]

Chapter IV

ANTHROPOLOGY

Anthropology comes from the Greek word “anthropos,” meaning “man.” Anthropology is the doctrine of man. There are

more accuracy than what the fifty-seven exceptional linguists did in 1611; in fact quite the opposite is true.

many different definitions of man, some comical, some tragic. In this study of anthropology we shall go to the true source — the Scriptures. Man has always wanted to know *who* he is, where he *came from*, and where he is *going*. God's Holy Word gives the only complete account.

I. Man In His State of Integrity

By this we mean man in his original state of purity, his uprightness.

A. *His Origin.*

1. *Negative.*

a. *Not by Abiogenesis or Spontaneous Generation.* This theory holds to the belief that there was no creator of man, but that man simply came into being without a cause and began to exist, fulfilling the nursery rhyme, which reads:

Where did you come from, Baby dear?

Out of the nowhere, into here!

This argument needs no answer, but in order to forestall criticism, we simply state that if such a thing as abiogenesis were possible, there would be no power to keep it from happening again. There is no record of a second occurrence, and, of course, it never happened in the first place.

b. *Not by Evolution or Natural Developments.* A short definition of evolution is: "That process by which, through some kind of aggregation of matter through many ages and species, by chance or by law, man appears." This concept has held sway for many years, but its adherents are on the decline. Modern science, such as anthropology, is refuting all of its claims. The Bible declares that man is a separate creation of God, and that the animals were created at a different time, completely apart from man. Evolution teaches that man and animals have a common origin, which branched out into the different species. In refuting this we use the Scriptures and human reasoning as follows:

(1) *It is Opposed to Scripture.* The Scriptures state: "After his kind" (Gen. 1:24). This pins the species down to themselves, forbidding them to evolve into a completely new species.

(2) *There is No Record of Animal Becoming Man.* Surely, in six thousand years, if

[pg121] evolution were true, there would be living examples of it today.

(3) *There is No Evidence that the Missing Link Has Been Found.* Many so-called history books show pictures of the creature they term as the missing link. These pictures are photographs of drawings, and not photographs of real creatures, as none of these exist. The “missing link,” we are told, is that creature between man and the ape. Its picture is wholly the imagination of the artist who took a piece of a bone or tooth and built a man around it. It is the same as a man taking a key hole and building a house around it. We would like to quote William Jennings Bryan concerning the “missing link”: “If the missing link has been found, why are they still looking for it?”

(4) *There is No Evidence that Primitive Man Differed From Man Today.*

(5) *There Is Proof that Human Blood is One Blood.* (Acts 17:26). World War II has proved this. The blood of a white man can be placed into the veins of a black man, and vice versa, and give life. Blood transfusions have only been in practice during the last hundred years, but God revealed this to us several thousand years ago.

(6) *There is a Great Difference Between the Constitution of Man and Animal.*

(a) *Physically.* Man is an upright being, while animals are on all fours.

(b) *Mentally.* Man has *intellect*, while animals have instinct.

(c) *Morally.* Man is the only creature of God that has moral qualities.

(d) *Spiritually.* Man alone has been created with spiritual concepts. He alone of all the creatures can worship God.

2. *Positive.* Man is a direct creation of God. “God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them” (Gen. 1:27).

B. His Nature.

1. *Original Image of Man.* “God said, Let us make man in our

image, after our likeness” (Gen. 1:26a). “Whoso sheddeth man’s blood, by man shall his blood be shed: for in the image of God made he man” (Gen. 9:6). See also I Corinthians 11:7; James 3:9.

a. *Seen in Man’s Triunity.* “The LORD God formed man out of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul” (Gen. 2:7). “The very God of peace sanctify you wholly: and I pray God your whole *spirit* and *soul* and *body* be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ” (I Thess. 5:23).

b. *Seen in Man’s Intellectual and Moral Nature.* “Lie not one to another, seeing that ye have put off the old man with his deeds; and have put on the new man, which is renewed in knowledge after the image of him that created him” (Col. 3:9, 10). See also Ephesians 4:24.

c. *Seen in Physical Likeness.* It is true that God is a Spirit (John 4:24); God is invisible (Col. 1:15). Yet God has always had a form in which He manifests Himself: “As for me, I shall behold thy face in righteousness; I shall be satisfied, when I awake with beholding thy form” (Ps. 17:15, R.V.¹⁰). See also Philippians 2:6,7; Mark 15:12; John 5:37, R.V.¹¹ [pg122]

Christ was not made in the form or image of Adam, but Adam was made in the form, or image of Christ, who was to come: “Nevertheless death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over them that had not sinned after the similitude of Adam’s transgression, who is the *figure* of him that was to come” (Rom. 5:14).

2. *Original Innocence of Man.* Some declare that Adam was created in holiness, or righteousness. This is not quite correct. Man was created perfect, yes, but he was created in innocence. There is a vast difference between innocence and righteousness. Innocence

10 The actual Bible gives this verse as: “As for me, I will behold thy face in righteousness: I shall be satisfied, when I awake, with thy likeness.” There is no reason for Dr. Cambren using the ecumenical revised version which changes a “will” to a “shall”, and incorrectly translates to an incomplete sentence, “when I awake with beholding thy form.” Shame on him and the ecumenical translators.

11 There is no reason in the world to trust the ecumenical translators of 1881 to render any of these verses with more accuracy than what the fifty-seven exceptional linguists did in 1611; in fact quite the opposite is true.

is sinlessness that has never faced trial. Righteousness is innocence that has been tested and tried, and has come out victorious.

C. His Constitution.

As we shall see, man is composed of earthly (Gen. 2:7) and spiritual elements (I Thess. 5:23; Heb. 4:12).

1. *Body.* His body was made from the earth. This was the first part of man that was formed. “The LORD God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul” (Gen. 2:7). The body is set forth in Scripture as the house of the inner man. “How much less in them that dwell in houses of clay, whose foundation is the dust, which are crushed before the moth?” (Job 4:19). See also II Corinthians 5:1, 3, 4. The process by which God made man is not known; we leave that up to God. Men give their opinions and speculations, but they remain as such. The word “dust” does not mean clay, or old dirty dirt, but the finest materials of the earth.

a. *Analysis Proves Man’s Source.* Modern chemical analysis detects in the body the same elements that are in the earth beneath man’s feet; such elements as sodium, carbon, iron, and the like.

b. *Earth Sustains Man’s Existence.* The body is sustained by that which grows out of the earth. It is man’s body and not his spirit that is sustained. Famine in our modern day has proved that if vegetation is taken away, life is taken away. *Kill vegetation and you kill man.*

c. *Death Substantiates Man’s Elements.* At death corruption sets in, and man’s body soon returns to the dust from which it was formed. “In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, till thou return unto the ground; for out of it wast thou taken: for dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return” (Gen. 3:19).

2. *Soul.* “The LORD God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul” (Gen. 2:7). See also I Corinthians 15:45. The soul is the seat of the emotions and appetites. Plants, animals and man have bodies; only animals and man have a soul; but only man has a spirit. The soul is that *conscious* life which is in man and animal. Plants have life, but it is *unconscious* life. There is a difference between the souls of men and the souls of animals. The

animal's soul is connected with his *body*, while man's soul is connected with his *spirit*. The soul of an animal dies with the animal, but man's soul never dies, for he was made a "living soul" — a soul that would never die. [pg123]

As stated, the soul of man is the seat of his emotions and appetites, and the following Scriptures will bring out the degrees of the same: *Appetites*: "Thou mayest kill and eat flesh in all thy gates, whatsoever thy soul lusteth after, according to the blessing of the LORD thy God which he hath given thee: the unclean and the clean may eat thereof, as of the roebuck, and as of the hart" (Deut. 12:15). *Desires*: "If any man said unto him, Let them not fail to burn the fat presently, and then take as much as thy soul desireth; then he would answer him, Nay; but thou shalt give it me now: and if not, I will take it by force" (I Sam. 2:16). See also Deuteronomy 12:20; Psalm 107:18; Proverbs 6:30; Isaiah 29:8; I Samuel 18:1. *Hates*: "David said on that day, Whosoever getteth up to the gutter, and smiteth the Jebusites, and the lame and the blind, that are hated of David's soul, he shall be chief and captain. Wherefore they said, The blind and the lame shall not come into the house" (II Sam. 5:8). *Mourns*: "His flesh upon him shall have pain, and his soul within him shall mourn" (Job 14:22). Is *Vexed*: "The man of God said, Let her alone; for her soul is vexed within her: and the LORD hath hid it from me, and hath not told me" (II Kings 4:27b). *Rejoices*: "I will greatly rejoice in the LORD, my soul shall be joyful in my God; for he hath clothed me with the garments of salvation, he hath covered me with a robe of righteousness, as a bridegroom decketh himself with ornaments, and as a bride adorneth herself with her jewels" (Is. 61:10). *Suffers*: "They said one to another, We are verily guilty concerning our brother, in that we saw the anguish of his soul, when he besought us, and we would not hear; therefore is this distress come upon us" (Gen. 42:21). *Sorrows*: "He said unto them, My soul is exceeding sorrowful unto death: tarry ye here, and watch" (Mark 14:34).

Where does man get his soul?

a. *Pre-existence*. This theory teaches that all souls that have ever been in the world, or shall ever be in the world, were created

in the beginning. At time of conception, they are united with the body. This was taught by Plato, but it was never accepted by the church, as it is without Scriptural foundation.

b. *Creationism*. This belief holds that after forty days of conception the soul unites with the body. Roman Catholicism proposes this. If this belief is true, then God is the creator of sinful souls.

c. *Traducianism*. This is the truth which holds that both soul and body are derived from the parents. “Adam lived a hundred and thirty years, and begat a son in his own likeness, after his image; and called his name Seth” (Gen. 5:3). See also Acts 17:24-26.

3. *Spirit*. Here is where man differs from all creatures. In Hebrews 12:9 God is said to be “Father of spirits.” This does not mean the Father of angels, but of the spirits of men made perfect. God is never said to be the Father of souls.

“As the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also” (Jas. 2:26). When a body dies, the soul departs with the spirit of man. The soul and spirit can be separated “the word of God is quick, and powerful, and sharper than any twoedged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart” (Heb. 4:12). However, there is no Scriptural proof that they are ever separated. The rich man of Luke 16 goes to Hades upon death, and he has both soul and spirit with him. See also Matthew 10:28.^[pg124]

The spirit of man is the seat of his intelligence. “What man knoweth the things of a man, save the spirit of man which is in him? even so the things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God” (I Cor. 2:11). Animals do not possess intelligence. “Be ye not as the horse, or as the mule, which have no understanding: whose mouth must be held in with bit and bridle, lest they come near unto thee” (Ps. 32:9).

The word “spirit,” both in the Hebrew and Greek, is sometimes translated as “breath,” and “wind.” The context determines the translation.

The materialists say that the word for spirit should be “breath,” and that when man dies he is gone forever.

Some people say that man lost his spirit at the Fall and regains his spirit at conversion. This would make him a dual being however, and this conception has no Scriptural grounds.

4. *Heart*. When we speak of the heart, we do not mean the muscle in the body, but rather the seat of conscience. “Let us draw near with a true heart in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience, and our bodies washed with pure water” (Heb. 10:22). See also I John 3:19,20; Acts 2:26; 5:3, 5; Matthew 22:37. There is a warning that there may be a profession without a possession, a head knowledge without a heart trust. “Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of the Father which is in heaven” See also Matthew 7:22, 23.

D. His Condition.

By this we mean man’s condition in his state of integrity before he fell.

1. *His Knowledge*. He had immediate knowledge, intuitive knowledge. He was not an adult infant. He named all animals that came from the hand of God; It would take an intelligent man to do this. “Adam gave names to all cattle, and to the fowl of the air, and to every beast of the field; but for Adam there was not found an help meet for him” (Gen. 2:20).

2. *His Fellowship*. He was able to commune with God. “The LORD God commanded the man saying, Of every tree of the garden thou mayest freely eat” (Gen. 2:16). “God said, Behold, I have given you every herb bearing seed, which is upon the face of all the earth, and every tree, in the which is the fruit of a tree yielding seed; to you it shall be for meat” (Gen. 1:29).

3. *His Home*. It was located in a garden. “The LORD God planted a garden eastward in Eden; and there he put the man whom he had formed” (Gen. 2:8). Some men claim that primitive man was a cave man, but this was not so, for he was a garden man. The first records we have of men living in caves are of the persecuted: “Of whom the world [pg125] was not worthy; they wandered in deserts, and in mountains, and in dens and caves of the earth” (Heb. 11:38), and of the insane: “when he was come out of the ship, immediately there met him out of the tombs a man with an

unclean spirit” (Mark 5:2).

This garden is not called Eden, but rather, the Garden in Eden. “Eden” means plains, or plateau. Armenia, no doubt, is the place where man began.

4. *His Companion*. “For Adam there was not found an help meet for him. . . . And the rib, which the LORD God had taken from man, made he a woman, and brought her unto the man” (Gen. 2:20, 22). The words “help meet” are not a compound word, but two separate ones, meaning “fit for.” Eve was “fit for” Adam. Some who laugh at this “rib story” cannot tell us where woman did come from. Why do you suppose God did not make woman from the dust? For the simple reason that God did not want to have two origins of man.

God can make a human being in four ways:

By conception.

Without the aid of a woman, as Eve.

Without a man or woman, as Adam.

Without a man, by a woman, as Christ.

5. *His Work*. “God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth” (Gen. 1:28). “The LORD God took the man, and put him into the garden of Eden to dress it and to keep it” (Gen. 2:15). There was employment in the garden, but no toil. There was work, but not the kind that wears one out. The word “keep” in Genesis 2:15 is best translated¹² “guard.” Against whom was Adam to guard the garden? Against wild animals?

No, there were none. Against wild men? No, for Adam was the only man. He was put on his guard against the possible appearance of the Devil. Whenever man is placed in a position of trust, God always gives ample warning.

6. *His Food*. “God said, Behold, I have given you every herb

12 Dr. Cambron uses the phrase “best translated” not to attack the fifty-seven expert linguist of 1611 but to convey additional meaning. It is unfortunate what ecumenical modernists did to make us rightfully gun-shy about the phrase.

bearing seed, which is upon the face of all the earth, and every tree, in the which is the fruit of a tree yielding seed; to you it shall be for meat” (Gen. 1:29). The first man and beast of the field were vegetarians. Their diets included no meat. Man was not carnivorous as evolutionists claim.

7. *His Responsibility.*

a. *To Replenish the Earth With a New Order — Man.* “God blessed them and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it” (Gen. 1:28). Adam was the first man: “The first man Adam was made a living soul” (I Cor. 15:45). Eve is the mother of all human beings. “Adam called his wife’s name Eve; because she was the mother of all living” (Gen. 3:20). [pg126]

b. *To Abstain from Eating of the Fruit.* This fruit was of the tree of the knowledge of Good and Evil. “The LORD God commanded the man saying, Of every tree of the garden thou mayest freely eat: but of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die” (Gen. 2: 16, 17).

They were allowed to eat freely, as there was plenty. There was only one tree forbidden them. We do not know what kind of fruit it was. Nothing was wrong with the fruit; there was just God’s prohibition behind it. God wanted Adam and Eve to have knowledge, but he did not want them to gain it by disobedience. Re-member, man had been placed on his guard; he had been warned of the enemy; Satan did not come in unawares. This being true, why did God allow Adam and Eve to be subjected to the attack of the Devil? Testing always comes before a blessing. Man always has to be tried before he is promoted.

E. *His Leadership. (Headship)*

The entire human race comes from that one man, Adam. As is the head, so are the descendants.

1. *Ethnography.* This is the branch of anthropology that considers man geographically and descriptively, treating of the subdivision of races, the causes of migration, and related matters. This science points to a common homeland — Armenia.

2. *Comparative Philology.* This is the science of language, and

it considers that men all come from the same origin.

3. *Psychology*. This is the science of the mind, and it also indicates that man comes from one origin.

4. *Physiology*. This is the science that deals with the organic structure of the body, and it declares that all men come from the same source, a common origin.

II. Man In His State of Sin

A. *The Fall of Man*.

Some may say that the fall of man is an old Babylonian fable, but we have only to look upon man and see him toil for his bread, weaken in his diseases, and die in his misery, to realize that he has had a fall. “By one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned” (Rom. 5:12). [pg127]

1. *The Source of Sin*. “Now the serpent was more subtle than any beast of the field which the LORD God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden?” (Gen. 3: 1). “I fear, lest by any means, as the serpent beguiled Eve through his subtlety, so your minds should be corrupted from the simplicity that is in Christ” (II Cor. 11:3). God is not speaking about a beast when He mentions the serpent, but a person. Notice that the Scripture does not say, “more subtle than any *other* beast of the field,” but leaves out the word “other,” stating only that he is more subtle than *any* beast. This is merely a statement of what God thinks of the Devil.

Nowhere in Scripture does it state that the Devil was *in* the serpent, but it does say that the serpent *was* the Devil. “He laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and bound him a thousand years” (Rev. 20:2).

2. *The Nature of Sin*. “The serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die: For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil. And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof, and

did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat” (Gen. 3:4-6). Now the fruit was all right; it was good fruit, with only the prohibition of God behind it. Some people may contend that it was a small thing to bring about man’s downfall, but we ask the question, “How many steps does it take to fall off a bluff?”

a. *He Doubted God’s Love.* In doubting God’s love, man denied God’s goodness, and acted apart from God and became a sinner. “There is a way which seemeth right unto a man, but the end thereof are the ways of death” (Prov. 14:12). See also Isaiah 55:6.

b. *He Doubted God’s Word.* In doubting God’s Word, man denied His Truth; denying His Truth, he acted in spite of God and became a criminal. “Whosoever committeth sin transgresseth also the law: for sin is the transgression of the law” (I John 3:4).

c. *He Doubted God’s Authority.* In doubting God’s authority, man denied God’s deity; denying His deity, he became contrary to God. Thus, he became God’s enemy and a rebel in God’s universe. “The carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be. So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God” (Rom. 8:7, 8).

The testing was given to see if man would stay true to God. He failed because he wanted to be a god. The Devil himself fell (Is. 14), because he wanted to be like the Most High God. This brought about his downfall, so he planted the same seed of false ambition in Adam and Eve to see if it would bring about their downfall, and it did.

Some may ask, “Was this fair to them?” They were warned and placed on guard against Satan. There was only one prohibition in the garden. They did not need the fruit; they lacked nothing. [pg128]

3. *The Effects of Sin.*

a. *Immediate Effects Upon Eve.*

(1) *Shame.* “They both were naked, the man and his wife, and were not ashamed. And the eyes of them both were opened, and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together, and made themselves aprons” (Gen. 2:25; 3:7). God himself is clothed with a garment of light (Ps. 104:2); and when He

made man, he made him in His own image and likeness. Thus, we believe that man also was clothed with a garment of light. When man sinned, that clothing of light was lost, and he made himself a fig leaf covering to take the place of that which was lost. Ever since, man has tried to put on what God once gave him, but he has nothing but filthy rags.

(2) *Fear*. “He said, I heard thy voice in the garden, and I was afraid, because I was naked; and I hid myself” (Gen. 3:10). Man still tries to hide from God.

(3) *Separation from God*. There is no doubt that man lost his perfect nature and ended his fellowship with God. There is no such thing as the Fatherhood of God and the brotherhood of man of the *natural* man, the unsaved man.

(4) *Expulsion from the Garden*. “The LORD God sent him forth from the garden of Eden to till the ground from whence he was taken. So he drove out the man; and he placed at the end of the garden of Eden cherubims, and a flaming sword, which turned every way to keep the way of the tree of life” (Gen. 3:23, 24). Man was *driven* out.

(5) *Lost Lordship Over Creation*. In the beginning Adam was indeed the ruler of all earthly creatures: “Thou madest him to have dominion over the works of thy hands; thou hast put all things under his feet: all sheep and oxen, yea, and the beast of the field; the fowl of the air, and the fish of the sea, and whatsoever passeth through the paths of the sea” (Ps. 8:6-8). This is not true of man today. He has lost that lordship. Christ will return it to man when He comes again (Heb. 2 and Is. 11).

b. *Remote Effects Upon Adam’s Posterity*.

(1) *The Spirit is Darkened*. “This I say therefore, and testify in the Lord, that ye henceforth walk not as other Gentiles walk, in the vanity of their mind, having the understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the blindness of their heart” (Eph. 4:17, 18). The darkened room of understanding will remain darkened until the Holy Spirit comes in to illuminate.

(2) *The Soul Is Debased and Corrupt*. Unbelievers, “being past feeling have given themselves over unto lasciviousness to

work all uncleanness with greediness” (Eph. 4:19). See also Jeremiah 17:9.

(3) *The Body Is Subjected to Disease and Death.* “The creature itself also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God” (Rom. 8:21).

4. *The Effects on Sin.*

a. *The Immediate Expression of God’s Judgment.*

(1) *On the Serpent.* “The LORD God said unto the serpent, Because thou hast done this, thou art cursed above all cattle, and above every beast of the field; upon thy belly shalt thou go, and dust shalt thou eat all the days of thy life: and I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel” (Gen. 3:14, 15). Satan, in all of his majesty, is considered nothing but a serpent. This is a figure of speech, for we know that snakes do not eat dust. [pg129]

God’s decree unto the serpent that he should eat dust all the days of his life, showed the contempt in which He held the Devil.

(2) *On the Woman.* “Unto the woman he said, I will greatly multiply thy sorrow and thy conception; in sorrow shalt thou bring forth children; and thy desire shall be to thy husband, and he shall rule over thee” (Gen. 3:16).

(3) *On Creation.* “Unto Adam he said, Because thou hast hearkened unto the voice of thy wife, and hast eaten of the tree, of which I commanded thee, saying, Thou shalt not eat of it: cursed is the ground for thy sake; in sorrow shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life; thorns also and thistles shall it bring forth to thee; and thou shalt eat the herb of the field” (Gen. 3:17, 18).

(4) *On Man.* “In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread till thou return unto the ground; for out of it wast thou taken: for dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return” (Gen. 3:19). See also Genesis 5:29.

b. *The Future Expression of God’s Judgment.* “The fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolators, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone:

which is the second death” (Rev. 21:8).

5. *The Provision for the Sinner.* “I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel” (Gen. 3:15). In the hour that man sinned, God promised a Redeemer. The Seed of the woman is no one else but Jesus Christ. “Unto Adam also and to his wife did the LORD God make coats of skin, and clothe them” (Gen. 3:21). When they realized their nakedness, they covered themselves with aprons of fig leaves. God clothed them with animal skins instead. As far as covering their nakedness was concerned, fig leaves were as good as animal skins; however, *blood* had to be spilt — “For without the shedding of blood there is no remission of sin.” They had to be covered with that which was slain for their sins. Likewise, the sinner today has to be clothed with the righteousness of Him who died for them.

B. The Fallen Sons of Adam.

1. *Their Standing.*

a. *In Adam.* “Since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead. For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive” (I Cor. 15:21, 22).

See also I Corinthians 15:45, 47; Romans 5:12-21. There are only two representative men in the world: the first man and the second man; the first Adam and the last Adam. All men are born in Adam; all born-again men are in Christ.

b. *Of Sin and Guilt.* “What then? are we better than they? No, in no wise: for we have before proved both Jews and Gentiles, that they are all under sin, as it is written, There is none righteous, no, not one” (Rom. 3:9, 10). See also Romans 3:19.

2. *Their State.* By their state we mean their spiritual condition; that is, the absence of righteousness in their spiritual life.

a. *Sinful in Nature.* “Behold, I was shapen in iniquity; and in sin did my mother conceive me” (Ps. 51:5). See also Ephesians 2:3; Genesis 6:5; Jeremiah 17:9; Romans 8:7; [pg130] Galatians 5:19-21.

b. *Sinful in Practice.* “We ourselves also were sometimes foolish, disobedient, deceived, serving divers lusts and pleasures, living in malice and envy, hateful, and hating one another” (Titus

3:3). See also Romans 3:23; Colossians 1:21; Psalm 14:1-3.

c. *Lost in Sin*. “The Son of man is come to seek and to save that which was lost” (Luke 19:10). See also Isaiah 53:6; II Corinthians 4:3, 4.

d. *Spiritually Dead*. “You hath he quickened who were dead in trespasses and sins...Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, by grace are ye saved” (Eph. 2:1, 5). God’s picture of a sinner is a dead man, a man with all of the organs of movement, but no motion. Likewise, the sinner cannot move in the things of God.

e. *Under God’s Wrath*. “The wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness” (Rom. 1:18). See also John 3:36.

f. *Waits for Death*. “It is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment (Heb. 9:27).

g. *Sure of Hell*. “Whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire” (Rev. 20:15). See also Revelation 21:8.

III. Man In His State of Grace

A. His Standing.

1. *In Christ*. As in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive” (I Cor. 15:22). See also I Corinthians 15:21, 45, 47; Romans 5:12-21.

2. *Of Perfection*. “According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love. . . . To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he hath made us accepted in the beloved” (Eph. 1:4, 6). There are no charges against the Head; and, as that is so, there can be no charges against the Body.

B. His State.

By this we mean his spiritual condition. This differs from the life of the unbeliever. In the believer’s life righteousness is present — the righteousness of the Lord Jesus Christ.

1. *A New Creature*. “If any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away, behold, all things are become

new” (II Cor. 5:17). See also 11 Peter 1:4; Galatians 6:15; John 3:16. Regeneration is a re-creation. Only God can create; only God can re-create.

2. *Saved*. “Who hath saved us, and called us with an holy calling, not according to our works, but according to his own purpose and grace, which was given us in Christ Jesus before the world began” (II Tim. 1:9). See also Ephesians 2:8,9. [pg131]

3. *Dead Unto Sin*. “Likewise reckon ye also yourselves to be dead indeed unto sin, but alive unto God through Jesus Christ our Lord” (Rom. 6:11). “Who his ownself bare our sins in his own body on the tree, that we, being dead to sins, should live unto righteousness: by whose stripes ye were healed” (I Peter 2:24).

4. *Child of God*. “As many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name” (John 1:12). “Ye are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus” (Gal. 3:26).

5. *Under God’s Favor*. “Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ” (Eph. 1:3). See also Romans 5:2.

6. *Waits for God and Glory*. “Our conversation is in heaven; from whence also we look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ: Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto his glorious body, according to the working whereby he is able to subdue all things unto himself” (Phil. 3:20,21).

7. *Sure of Heaven*. “The Lord shall deliver me from every evil work, and will preserve me unto his heavenly kingdom: to whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen” (II Tim. 4:18). See also I Peter 1:4.

C. *His Two Natures*.

“The flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other: so that ye cannot do the things that ye would” (Gal. 5:17).

The above Scriptures could not describe anyone but a saved man. The sinner has but one nature; the child of God has two natures. Every true believer has experienced the warfare of which Paul speaks. This warfare is best demonstrated by the household of Abraham. He had two sons — Ishmael, the older; and Isaac, the

younger. Ishmael stands for that born of the flesh, while Isaac stands for that born of the Spirit. The trouble started when Isaac came into the household. Trouble comes into a Christian's life when Christ enters in.

1. *The Description of the Old Nature.*

a. *Names and Characteristics.*

(1) *The Flesh.* "That which is born of the flesh is flesh" (John 3:6). See also Romans 7:18, 23; 8:9. By "the flesh" we do not mean "muscles and sinews," which are part of the human body, but rather the carnal nature, which all possess at birth. There is no such thing as our being in the flesh; the flesh is in us. No man has ever begotten an unfallen man. "For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh,) dwelleth no good thing" (Rom. 7:18a). See also John 6:63; Romans 8:8. There is no such thing as a person being born with a "divine spark" within them.

(2) *The Natural Man.* "The natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned" (I Cor. 2:14). This is what man is by nature, by his natural birth. [pg132]

(3) *The Old Man.* "Our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin" (Rom. 6:6). See also Ephesians 4:22; Colossians 3:9. This is the man of old — what we once were: corrupt, full of evil desires and lusts.

(4) *The Outward Man.* "Though our outward man perish, yet the inward man is renewed day by day" (II Cor. 4:16).

(5) *The Heart.* "From within, out of the heart of men, proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders, thefts, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, lasciviousness, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness: all these evil things come from within, and defile the man" (Mark 7:21-23). We hear so much of man having a change of heart, but this is impossible, for only God can give a new heart.

(6) *The Carnal Mind.* "The carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be" (Rom. 8:7).

(7) *Sin*. “By one man *sin* entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned” (Rom. 5:12). The word “sin” refers to the fallen nature of man, while “sins” refer to the actions of this nature.

b. *The Character and End*.

(1) *It Is an Adam’s Nature*. This means that Adam fell, and his children are, therefore, fallen children of a fallen father.

(2) *It Is an Inherited Nature*. We receive our fallen nature from Adam.

(3) *It Is an Evil Nature*. The eighth chapter of Romans is a commentary on this point.

(4) *It Is an Unchangeable Nature*. “That which is born of the flesh is flesh” (John 3:6a). As long as man lives, that fallen nature remains in him. It will be eradicated only at the resurrection of the dead in Christ, and the transformation of those alive in Christ, at His second appearing.

(5) *Its End Is Death*. “The wages of sin is death” (Rom. 6:23a). See also Romans 8:5-13.

2. *The Description of the New Nature*.

a. *Its Names and Characteristics*.

(1) *Spirit*. “That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit” (John 3:6).

(2) *Divine Nature*. There “are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these ye might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the correction that is in the world through lust” (II Peter 1:4). See also I John 3:9; 5:18, 19.

(3) *The New Man*. “Put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness” (Eph. 4:24). See also Colossians 3:10; II Corinthians 5:17.

(4) *The Inward Man*. “Though our outward man perish, yet the inward man is renewed day by day” (II Cor. 4:16). “I delight in the law of God after the inward man” (Rom. 7:22). See also Ephesians 3:16.

(5) *Mind*. “I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord. So then with the mind I myself serve the law of God: but with the flesh the law of sin” (Rom. 7:25). [pg133]

b. *Its Character and End*.

- (1) *It Is a Christly Nature.*
- (2) *It Is An Imported Nature..*
- (3) *It Is a Holy Nature.*
- (4) *It Is an Unchangeable Nature.*
- (5) *It Is Non-forfeited Nature.*

Verses 1 and 2 of I John 2 ‘speak of the relation of the saint with the Father. Even when the saint sins it is a family matter.

(6) *It’s End is Resurrection and Rapture.* “Behold, I shew you a mystery; we shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. For this corruptible shall put on incorruption, and this mortal shall put on immortality... But thanks be to God, which giveth *us* the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ (I Cor. 15:51-53, 57).

3. *The Conflict Between the Two Natures.*

a. *The Believer’s Experience.* Every child of God has two natures; the unsaved man has only one nature. The old nature cannot be eradicated while the believer lives in the flesh; therefore, we have the fight between the old and new natures. “The flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other: so that ye cannot do the things that ye would” (Gal. 5: 17). Romans 7:15-25 is another marvelous example illustrating this truth. However, someone may declare that this passage shows the conflict in Paul’s life *before* he was saved, but one verse in this passage clearly reveals that this conflict, so vividly described, occurred *after* he was saved: “I delight in the law of God after the inward man” (Rom. 7:22). *No unsaved man ever delights after the law of God.* Also, only the saved man has the *inward man*, which is the new nature.

b. *The Believer’s Responsibility.*

(1) *In Relation To the Old Nature.*

(a) *Accept God’s Estimate of It.* “Our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin. For he that is dead is freed from sin. Now if we be dead with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with him: knowing that Christ being raised from the dead dieth no

more; death hath no more dominion over him. For in that he died, he died unto sin once: but in that he liveth, he liveth unto God. Likewise reckon ye also yourselves to be dead indeed unto sin, but alive unto God through Jesus Christ our Lord” (Rom. 6:6-11). This one truth must be pointed out: the old man is never said to be crucified *in* the believer, but is crucified *with Christ*. It is a reality! Accept it! It is not a matter of feeling, but one of faith. All of this truth is according to God’s view. As for the believer’s view, he knows that the old nature, the old man, is not dead; he is very much alive. The Scripture says, “Reckon ye also yourselves to be dead indeed unto sin.” If the old nature were actually dead, the believer would not have to *reckon* him so; he would *know*.

(b) *Make No Provision for the Flesh*. “Put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh, to fulfill the lusts thereof (Rom. 13:14). In other words, do not feed the flesh. Starve it. [pg134]

(c) *Mortify the Flesh*. “Mortify therefore your members which are upon the earth; fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, and covetousness, which is idolatry” (Col. 3:5). A stronger term is, “Put to death, therefore, your members.” The words “as good as dead” (Heb. 11:12) are the same terminology.

(d) *Never Try to Improve It*. “Neither yield your members as instruments of unrighteousness unto sin: but yield yourselves unto God, as those that are alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousness unto God” (Rom. 6:13).

(e) *Put It Off*. “Put off concerning the form of conversation the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts” (Eph. 4:22). The same word is translated “laid down” in Acts 7:58.

(2) *In Relation to the New Nature*.

(a) *Reckon Ourselves to Be Alive*. “Reckon ye also yourselves to be dead indeed unto sin, but *alive* unto God through Jesus Christ our Lord” (Rom. 6:11).

(b) *Walk in Newness of Life*. “We are his workmanship, created unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them” (Eph. 2:10). See also Romans 6:14; 7:6.

(c) *Feed and Nourish It*. “As newborn babes, desire the

sincere milk of the word, that ye may grow thereby” (I Peter 2:2). We are to feed the new nature by the exposition of the Word, and not by the exhortation of man. We know we have two natures, and it is well to consider that the food for one will starve the other. It is the individual Christian who must decide which man, the old or the new, shall be fed. He cannot feed both at the same time.

(d) *Put On the New Man*. “Put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness” (Eph. 4:24).

(e) *Depend Upon the Indwelling Spirit for Power*. “Grieve not the Holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption” (Eph. 4:30). “My brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might” (Eph. 6:10). “Not by might, nor by power, but by my spirit, saith the LORD of hosts” (Zech. 4:6b).¹³

Chapter 3 A Six Day Creation

Dogmatically holding on to God's six day creation account alleviates major false teachings that are alive and growing in the twenty first century since our Lord Jesus Christ. The theory of evolution (which is more accurately and scientifically an irresponsible hypothesis; there not being enough evidence to advance it to theory), the gap theory (again properly categorized as an irresponsible hypothesis), and the Nephilim “Giant” theory (a wild and irresponsible hypothesis), are three such false teachings that will be addressed and debunked in this short study.

Consider that inside of Christianity Satan has three categories of misleaders working against the cause of Christ, those who would believe scholarly man over the Bible, those who do not believe enough Bible, and those who believe too much Bible. Noble minds and charismatic characters readily advance from the position of “the misled” to the position of “the misleader.” The first of these misleaders is dealt with elsewhere in this work¹⁴, but the

13 Block quote of Dr. Cambron's *Bible Doctrines* page 116-134 (Zondervan 155-174).

14 The reformed theologian, for example, clearly believes the genius mind of men i.e. believing the orthodoxy of Luther and Calvin, Saint Aquinas and Augustine, et al., over clear declarations of Holy Scripture; Bible correctors

latter two fit well the errors exposed in this section. The evolutionist clearly does not believe enough Bible, i.e. denying the six day creation, supposing bio-genesis, and denying the seven declarations of “after his kind.” The last category, those who believe to much Bible, needs a more careful consideration here.

Those who believe in a flat earth call themselves the true literalists of Bible interpretation. If a tree can be tall enough to reach heaven and be seen “thereof to the end of all the earth” (Daniel 4:10-11) then, they suppose, “the Bible teaches that the world is flat and we ought to believe the Bible rather than man.”¹⁵ You might debate for hours with such mislead individuals but they will not be swayed, they are certain that they simply believe more Bible than you do. I loosely categorize them here as those who believe to much Bible.

Those who would believe in a Genesis gap consider themselves sincere devoted students of the Bible, who can see things that others overlook. Little snippets of Scripture, hidden away in little obscure references, they say, teach us that Genesis 1:2 is in a “dateless past”, includes the overthrow of a primal order, and references cataclysmic changes from divine judgment. For them, these references, taken out of their context, are unequivocal, and those who will not see it, well, they are just ignorant of the secret, hidden things of the Bible. They go on to see that angels bred with humans, creating half-breed giants, and that is why God destroyed the world in a flood. They go on to see that giants were in Canaan land, and we all know where giants come from,... God said so. Currently they suppose that Washington DC is filled with these giants and there is a whole cult of charismatic leaders teaching things about the end-times and Nephilims. These believe more Bible than most because they have a special inspired insight to the hidden things of God. I loosely categorize them here as those

fit this category as well.

15 Edward Rice, “*God’s Glory, God’s Handiwork, and God’s Word, The Genesis Account*,” A Dissertation Presented to the Faculty of Louisiana Baptist Theological Seminary, January 2017, “Chapter 12-Defiance of Science,” pg 234-248 [also published at http://www.gsbaptistchurch.com/seminary/dissertation/6day_creation_dissertation.pdf, accessed 8/15/2018]

who believe to much Bible.

God means what he says and he says what he means. That is the basic principle employed in debunking each of the false teachings of evolutionists, gaptists, and nephilimites. The three spring from three sources of error, the rebellious heart of the atheist, the errant heart of the Bible corrector, and the deceitful heart of the charismatic teacher. These three errors from these three sources serve well in underpinning the importance of holding God at his Word in deriving all doctrine systematically while holding tenaciously to his decree that all Scripture is the inerrant, infallible, verbally inspired word of God. Some Scripture excerpts will highlight this proper approach.

All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness: That the man of God may be perfect, throughly furnished unto all good works.
2Tim 3:16-17

We have also a more sure word of prophecy;... Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the scripture is of any private interpretation. For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost. 2Peter 1:19-21

In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth. And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters. And God said, Let there be light: and there was light....And God saw the light, that it was good:... And the evening and the morning were the first day.

And God said, Let there be a firmament in the midst of the waters,... And God called the firmament Heaven. And the evening and the morning were the second day.

And God said, Let the waters under the heaven be gathered together unto one place, and let the dry land appear: and it was so.... and God saw that it was good. And God said, Let the earth bring forth grass, ... and it was so.... and God saw that it was good. And the evening and the morning were the third day.

And God said, Let there be lights in the firmament of the heaven to divide the day from the night;... and it was so.... he made the stars also.... and God saw that it was good. And the evening and the morning were the fourth day.

And God said, Let the waters bring forth abundantly the moving creature that hath life,... and God saw that it was good.... And the evening and the morning were the fifth day.

And God said, Let the earth bring forth the living creature after his kind,... and it was so.... And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness:...So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them. ... And God saw every thing that he had made, and, behold, it was very good. And the evening and the morning were the sixth day.

Thus the heavens and the earth were finished, and all the host of them. And on the seventh day God ended his work which he had made; and he rested on the seventh day from all his work which he had made. And God blessed the seventh day, and sanctified it: because that in it he had rested from all his work which God created and made.

Genesis 1 - 2:3

A word for word belief in God's Genesis accounting alleviates the false teachings about man... yeah, about most religions and theologies themselves.

Six Days With No Evolution

Believing that God means what he says and says what he means refutes every tenet of evolution. There need be no extensive research into how one gauges the age of rocks and bones, nor knowledge of anyone's kingdom, phylum, class, order, family, genes and species. One does not even need to know a specific evidence that refutes an evolutionary, survival of the fittest concept. Taking God at his Word thoroughly refutes evolution. At the heart of it all there are only two concepts, creation vs evolution.

The creationist declares that he has the Bible on his side, and the evolutionist declares he has science on his side. There is no middle ground here, one is truth and one is lie. The Word has said that He is Truth (John 14), and the Word of God is our sole and final authority, so let's look for a moment at their authority, science. Science is, by their definition, all natural science; there is no room or allowance for any Supernatural in their scientific method. None, nada, zip. In fact they have taken particular care to deny every Bible recorded instance of a Supernatural involvement. The “they” in this declaration is unregenerate, fallen and depraved man, and “their” involvement in this denial is aged and varied. What is “new” in their development is a formal “scientific method” which they most highly esteemed and made their final authority around the turn of the last century.

Their greatest challenge, and now their greatest success, has been the denial of the Supernatural Creator and construction of the lie of evolution. They have no scientific evidence, i.e. their finest DNA laboratories cannot reconstruct how breeding dogs eventually came to produce a Clydesdale horse, or egg laying lizards came to produce a bald eagle, and yet they have so dynamically taught their concepts to three or four generations of our children that evolution is readily accepted as “scientific fact.” They now slander and vilify any creationist as one who “rejects science.” Neil DeGrasse Tyson, Bill Maher, and Bill Nye¹⁶ have publicly promoted that any

¹⁶ Neil DeGrasse Tyson, is a self-proclaimed spokesman and feigned replacement of Carl Sagan (1934-1996), the arch-atheist of the 20th century, William Maher is an American comedian, political commentator, and television host known for the HBO political talk show “Real Time with Bill

person teaching children that the Bible is true should be charged with child abuse.¹⁷

Dr. Cambron has already outlined for us that man's origin is “Not by Abiogenesis or Spontaneous Generation” and “Not by Evolution or Natural Developments” and proposed that these speculations are so preposterous that they need no answer from a true Bible student. Anyone who would purport to stand on some middle ground and suppose some type of theistic evolution is totally naive of this bigger picture. Theistic evolution calls God the big deceiver. Let's say it again, God says what he means and means what he says.

Euro Team Outreach Inc. developed an exceptional “Bible First” outreach program that clarifies all of God's Word through a study of Genesis. In their Lesson 5 they give this Biblical defiance of abiogenesis:

Did you know?

Biogenesis is the development of living organisms from other living organisms. The Bible describes this process and the stability of each kind of living organism when it repeatedly uses the phrase “after his kind.”

* “...the herb yielding seed after his kind...”

(Genesis 1:12)

* “...the tree yielding fruit... after his kind...”

(Genesis 1:12)

* “...the great whales...after their kind...”

(Genesis 1:21)

* “...every winged fowl after his kind...”

(Genesis 1:21)

* “...the beast of the earth after his kind...”

(Genesis 1:25)

Maher,” and William Sanford Nye, popularly known as Bill Nye the Science Guy, is an American science communicator, television presenter, and mechanical engineer.

17 Edward G. Rice, “God's Glory, God's Handiwork, and God's Word, The Genesis Account, A Dissertation Presented to the Faculty of Louisiana Baptist Theological Seminary”, January 2017, pg65, 77, 131
[\[http://www.gsbaptistchurch.com/seminary/dissertation/6day_creation_dissertation.pdf\]](http://www.gsbaptistchurch.com/seminary/dissertation/6day_creation_dissertation.pdf), accessed 8/2/2018].

* “...cattle after their kind...” (Genesis 1:25)

* “...everything that creepeth... after his kind...”

(Genesis 1:25)

The phrase stresses the reproductive integrity of each kind of animal and plant. Today we understand that biogenesis occurs because all of these reproductive systems are governed by their respective genetic codes.

...

Conclusion

The first chapter of Genesis is without doubt the most astounding historical account known to man. It is the foundation that gives meaning to life and answers so many of our hardest philosophical questions: “Where did I come from?”, “Why am I here?”, “How did the universe originate?”, and “What is the true meaning of life?” We who believe the Bible rest confidently in its simple answer: God. God made the world. God made us. God set the standard of good and evil and wrote it on our hearts. God loves us, and God desires fellowship with us.

“Thou, even thou, art LORD alone; thou hast made heaven, the heaven of heavens, with all their host, the earth, and all things that are therein, the seas, and all that is therein, and thou preservest them all; and the host of heaven worshippeth thee.” (Nehemiah 9:6)¹⁸

It does not take great study or in depth research to expel the atheistic hypothesis of evolution, it takes only a belief in God's inerrant, infallible, verbally inspired Word found in our Holy Bible. Understand that “they” mean by “science” only a natural science, and even that is twisted to say what “they” want it to say. Now connect that with the understanding that God means what he says and says what he means and evolution is seen as only, and at best, via the rules of their own scientific method, a very bad hypothesis. As Dr. Cambron stated previous, the evolutionists speculations are so preposterous that they need no answer from a

18 “Bible First, Volume 2, Lesson 5”, Euro Team Outreach Inc, 2013, pg 38, 47.

true Bible student.

Six Days With No Gap

Believing that God means what he says and says what he means refutes every tenet of the gap theory. The idea of a gap left open in God's Genesis account was conceived in brilliant minds of Bible believing scholars. C. I. Scofield (1843-1921), author of the notes for "*The Scofield Study Bible*" was one of the earliest Bible scholars to extensively document this *Gap Theory*. Through his extensive Bible study Scofield establishes that Genesis 1:2 is in a "dateless past," includes the overthrow of a primal order, and references cataclysmic changes from divine judgment. His supposing that there needed to be a "dateless past" inserted into the Genesis account was at least seeded by the "scientific proof" that rocks are, and our universe is, millions of years old, ergo God's record of a 4,000 BC creation must be a little suspect. In developing and defending this gap in God's creation record, C. I. Scofield was absolutely convinced that he had unlocked an important key to referencing and cross referencing Bible truth about a primal order that was destroyed in a divine judgment. There are Bible scholars who built on Scofield's *gaptist* foundation and vehemently deny all naysayers.

The logic that glues the *gaptist* ideology together seems powerful to some, so one needs a good dose of skepticism available as Scofield's defense is presented. Little snippets of scripture are interwoven to produce the logical underpinning of the gap theory; they are intriguing and they construct a sturdy straw-house, but it is a house-of-cards. God does not plainly and openly reveal some things to man. When Satan fell, intricate details about angels, fallen or faithful, and the time of Christ's return are among those details which are purposefully left out. There is a theme in the Bible, and they are not part of it. God's progressive revelation to man about man and his needs does not include a lot of angelology. When a Bible student supposes that, through extensive cross-referencing, or perhaps even divine revelation, they discovered some unrevealed thing, their teachings often take on a

life of their own. It always does one good to recall Deuteronomy 29:29, “*The secret things belong unto the LORD our God: but those things which are revealed belong unto us and to our children for ever, that we may do all the words of this law.*” Everything that God wanted revealed got written down in the Holy Bible. His themes are easily followed and his ability to keep the main thing the main thing is remarkable; for carnal man, not so much. Remember, God means what he says and says what he means; one should be cautious about trailing off on winding trails blazed by even the brightest of Bible students turned teachers.

C. I. Scofield introduces his gap theory with the word “*but*” in a footnote connected to the word “*created*” in Genesis 1:1. “But three *creative* acts are recorded in this chapter: (1) the heavens and the earth, v.1; (2) animal life, v.21; and (3) human life, vs. 26,27. The first creative act refers to the dateless past, and gives scope for all the geologic ages.”¹⁹ Creationists, arguing for the exacting words of God in this verse, make particular note that “God created the heaven (singular) and the earth.” Modernist translators make the heavens plural here in their attempt to correct the Bible and put what they suppose God meant to say. Scofield makes the same plural reference. The Hebrew singular is significant here because Genesis 1:1 is not referencing the three heavens called out later in revelation, it is referencing the creation of the *space continuum*. It is carefully defended by ardent Bible believing creationists that three continua are created in this verse - time, space, and matter.²⁰ Scofield's reference to “the heavens (plural) and the earth” as one of his “creative acts” is thereby significant in that he is about to cram thousands and thousands of years into a misrepresentation of what the Bible states to begin with.

Notice also that Scofield, by making this verse reference a “dateless past,” gives scope for all the “geologic ages” ardently

19 C. I. Scofield, “*The Scofield Reference Bible*”, Oxford University Press, Inc., 1909, pg 3.

20 Edward G. Rice, “God's Glory, God's Handiwork, and God's Word, The Genesis Account, A Dissertation Presented to the Faculty of Louisiana Baptist Theological Seminary”, January 2017, pg 151.
[\[http://www.gsbaptistchurch.com/seminary/dissertation/6day_creation_dissertation.pdf\]](http://www.gsbaptistchurch.com/seminary/dissertation/6day_creation_dissertation.pdf), accessed 8/2/2018].

defended by atheistic evolutionists of his day. The atheistic evolutionist considers only Sir Charles Lyell's (1797-1875) theory of uniformity and sees only millions of years of rock layers, which must have stacked one upon another; he and C. I. Scofield call them the "geologic ages." Ergo the gaptists cater to the atheistic evolutionists who allow no Supernatural interventions in their natural science, which is indeed "science so called"²¹ (1Tim. 6:20).

Scofield continues his introductory development of a *Gap Theory* with a footnote attached to "*without form*" in the second sentence God's creation account. Therein he states, "Jer. 4:23-26, Isa 24:1 and 45:18, clearly indicate that the earth had undergone a cataclysmic change as the result of a divine judgment. The face of the earth bears everywhere the marks of such a catastrophe. There are not wanting intimations which connect it with a previous testing and fall of angels. See Ezk. 28:12-15 and Isa. 14:9-14, which certainly go beyond the kings of Tyre and Babylon."²²

One needs to examine these verses in context; C. I. Scofield is expert at cross-referencing Bible verses. This author has leaned on his cross-referencing genius for over fifty years. His reference to Jeremiah 4:23 is key to understanding how C. I. Scofield got started down this gaptist rabbit trail. God used the phrase "without form <08414>, and void<0922>" in the Genesis opening account of his creative act. As a general rule when a key word or phrase is repeated in two or more Scriptures it is worth investigation. This is best done in the original languages, but when cross-referencing between the old and new testaments it is best done, for English Bible students, with a King James Bible. The fifty-seven exceptional linguists who took seven years translating from the very best original manuscripts, and finished their work in 1611 AD, were very cognizant of God's propensity for repeating key words and phrases. All modernist ecumenical translators, on the other hand, were very cognizant that they had to use different manuscripts and different words, to include over 60,000 significant

21 This title is derived from 1Timothy 6:20 "O Timothy, keep that which is committed to thy trust, avoiding profane and vain babblings, and oppositions of science falsely so called:"

22 Scofield, Ibid.

deviations, in order to secure their lucrative copyrights. They wholeheartedly did both; be very leery of any society that tries to copyright God's words; at best they give what they think God meant to say. Modernist bibles are terrible for cross-referencing God's words; if you do not have access to a KJB invest in a Strong's Concordance or learn to use Greek and Hebrew.

Here are the Scriptures that Scofield used to suppose an overthrown "primal order."

Jer. 4:3 For thus saith the LORD to the men of Judah and Jerusalem, Break up your fallow ground, and sow not among thorns....

22 For my people is foolish, they have not known me; they are sottish children, and they have none understanding: they are wise to do evil, but to do good they have no knowledge.

23 I beheld the earth, and, lo, it was without form <08414>, and void<0922>; and the heavens <08064>, and they had no light.

24 I beheld the mountains, and, lo, they trembled, and all the hills moved lightly.

25 I beheld, and, lo, there was no man, and all the birds of the heavens were fled.

26 I beheld, and, lo, the fruitful place was a wilderness, and all the cities thereof were broken down at the presence of the LORD, and by his fierce anger.

27 For thus hath the LORD said, The whole land shall be desolate; yet will I not make a full end.

28 For this shall the earth mourn, and the heavens above be black: because I have spoken it, I have purposed it, and will not repent, neither will I turn back from it.

To this Scripture, verse 23, C. I. Scofield adds this footnote, "Cf. Gen. 1:2. 'Without form and void' describes the condition of the earth as the result of the judgment (vs. 24-26; Isa. 24:1) which

overthrew the primal order of Gen. 1:1.”²³

Although the context of this Scripture is about God's fierce anger toward the men of Judah and Jerusalem (vr. 3,22), and although the reference, “the whole land shall be desolate,” (vr. 27) requires it to be about what God did do to his promised land, verses 23 through 26 do seem to intimate a previous destruction; they seem to “go beyond” the context at hand. This supposing that a Scripture goes beyond its present context is not unprecedented. Scofield justifies it previously by referencing Ezk. 28:12-15 and Isa. 14:9-14, “which certainly go beyond the kings of Tyre and Babylon.” The difference here is that the insight gained about the fall and upcoming destruction of Satan in Ezekiel and Isaiah, completely aligns with other references in Scripture, but the rise and fall of a primal order wedged in between Genesis 1:1 and Genesis 1:2 completely disrupts other references in Scripture.

Our small minds may not conceive how Satan could have been created and then fallen within the fifty-six verses before Genesis 3:1, but Scripture's require that it be so. Further, all things that were created were created in six days of creation (Exod. 20:11, 31:17), were created by The Word, The Christ (John 1:1-3, Eph. 3:9, Rev. 4:11), and were created very good (Gen. 1:31); Satan and all heaven's hosts (angels and more) are created beings (Ezk. 28:13,15, Job 38:6-7, Isa 45:12, Col. 1:16, Rev. 10:6), and were thus created in that six day period. The creation account allows no gap between Genesis 1:1 and Genesis 1:2.

Further the Bible is clear that there was no death in the universe prior to man's fall (Rom 5:12-18). The gaptist theory has the Garden of Eden setting on piles of bones from an overthrown primal order. When Genesis 1:1-5 is taken literally as inerrant, infallible, verbally inspired, holy Scripture it opens a vista of a created time continuum, a space continuum, and a matter continuum, all spoken into existence out of nothing at all, all codependent and interdependent, all without form and void, all completely supportive of everything we might ever understand about matter, space, and time via atomic structures and molecules bonding, via outer regions the universe and black-holes

23 Ibid., pg 776.

disintegrating matter, or via Einstein's $E = m c^2$ and theories of relativity.²⁴ There is no room for an artificial insertion of geologic ages between Genesis 1:1 and Genesis 1:2.

The ever present danger of ones hypothesized insights into secret and hidden things in Scripture is they take on a life of their own and soon Scriptures that have nothing whatsoever to do with the theory suddenly clearly fit into the offshoot. Such is clearly the case with this gaptist hypothesis. Isaiah 24 has nothing whatsoever to do with the hypothesized primal order, and yet gaptists hold that verse one is talking about nothing but their hypothesis.

Isa. 24:1 Behold, the LORD maketh the earth empty, and maketh it waste, and turneth it upside down, and scattereth abroad the inhabitants thereof.

- 2 And it shall be, as with the people, so with the priest; as with the servant, so with his master; as with the maid, so with her mistress; as with the buyer, so with the seller; as with the lender, so with the borrower; as with the taker of usury, so with the giver of usury to him.
- 3 The land shall be utterly emptied, and utterly spoiled: for the LORD hath spoken this word.
- 4 The earth mourneth and fadeth away, the world languisheth and fadeth away, the haughty people of the earth do languish.
- 5 The earth also is defiled under the inhabitants thereof; because they have transgressed the laws, changed the ordinance, broken the everlasting covenant.
- 6 Therefore hath the curse devoured the earth, and they that dwell therein are desolate: therefore the

24 Edward G. Rice, "God's Glory, God's Handiwork, and God's Word, The Genesis Account, A Dissertation Presented to the Faculty of Louisiana Baptist Theological Seminary", January 2017, pgs 1-275. [http://www.gsbaptistchurch.com/seminary/dissertation/6day_creation_dissertation.pdf, accessed 8/2/2018].

inhabitants of the earth are burned, and few men left.

From this lapse in proper exegesis, from this misplaced hermeneutics, gaptists now see Isa 45:18 to “clearly indicate that the earth had undergone a (their supposed) cataclysmic change as the result of divine judgment.”

Isa. 45:17 But Israel shall be saved in the LORD with an everlasting salvation: ye shall not be ashamed nor confounded world without end.

18 For thus saith the LORD that created the heavens; God himself that formed the earth and made it; he hath established it, he created it not in vain, he formed it to be inhabited: I am the LORD; and there is none else.

19 I have not spoken in secret, in a dark place of the earth: I said not unto the seed of Jacob, Seek ye me in vain: I the LORD speak righteousness, I declare things that are right.

Once a bad hypothesis, which has nothing whatsoever to do with the mainstream theme of Holy Scriptures, has taken good root it will twist the way many other Scriptures are seen, it will enlist some contingent of supporters, and it will be ardently defended against naysayers. In a footnote on Genesis 1:3 Scofield extends a subtle misrepresentation to support his hypothesis. He states there, “Neither here (in Genesis 1:3) nor in verses 14-18 is an original *creative* act implied. A different word is used. The sense is, made to *appear*, made *visible*. The sun and moon were *created* “in the beginning.” The “light” of course came from the sun, but the vapour diffused the light. Later the sun appeared in an unclouded sky.”²⁵ In C. I. Scofield's third note supporting a gap hypothesis, he necessitates that the sun and moon were not created on the fourth day as God states, but that they were, of course, and of

25 C. I. Scofield, “*The Scofield Reference Bible*”, Oxford University Press, Inc., 1909, pg 3.

necessity for this gap hypothesis, part of the first verse of creation. The whole defense of the gap hypothesis has a twisted, contorted problem with God's accounting of his six day creation. When it is necessary to twist and contort God's word to fit a hypothesis it is far better to discard the hypothesis than continue the contortion. God says what he means and means what he says, all things were created in six days.

A contingent of supporters, from a Bible institute in Florida, have even taken 2Peter 3:4-6 out of the context of the world flood of Noah's day and force fit it into their hypothesized destruction of a primal order. For them a gap is no longer hypothesized it is Bible doctrine, and they accuse their naysayers of being “willingly ignorant” as stated in verse 5 of this text. That, incidentally, may be the most polite thing their vitriol applies to those who disagree, i.e. those who study the creation account with a more objective reality.

Previously these gaptists were categorized with those who believe to much Bible because they suppose that they have found a hidden and secret interpretation that only the learned can see and believe. They are often attached to a charismatic defender of such a position and when one defies their mislead belief they excommunicate and villainize them. In that sense they pattern themselves like a cult, and have been viewed as such by some. The division is ugly and harmful to the cause of Christ, but, again, an appeal that they just believe the Bible is vain, because they suppose that they do. They suppose that they believe it better and more exactly than you do. Herein separate “camps” dwell together in unity, but that is not God's intent in Psalm 133.

*Psalm 133:1 Behold, how good and how pleasant it is
for brethren to dwell together in unity!*

*2 It is like the precious ointment upon the head, that
ran down upon the beard, even Aaron's beard: that
went down to the skirts of his garments;*

*3 As the dew of Hermon, and as the dew that
descended upon the mountains of Zion: for there the
LORD commanded the blessing, even life for
evermore.*

Six Days, No Gap, No Half-breed Angels But a Depraved Humanity

Believing that God means what he says and says what he means refutes every tenet of the idea that angel-half-breed giants are the problem with this universe. Again a whole cultic group breaks from the ranks of Bible believers because of the misrepresentation of a few verses. They are cultic because they ardently follow a few charismatic leaders and they are misled because they develop and follow a theme that has nothing whatsoever to do with the main theme of the Bible, that Jesus Christ came to seek and to save that which was lost.

The whole cult hangs on a misinterpretation of Genesis 6:4 and an ignoring of Genesis 6:5-7. Genesis 6:4 might be easily misinterpreted in innocence, but examining how such a misrepresentation opened the door to such a brazen false teaching should make the student of the Bible leery about their interpretation. In Genesis 6:2 and 4 some hold that the “sons of God” were the “angels which kept not their first estate” (Jude 6), rather than the “sons of God” defined in John 1:12 *“But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name.”* These “sons of God” are also directly referenced in Romans 8:14, 19, Philippians 2:15, 1John 3:1, 2. They prefer this misrepresentation because Job 1:6, 2:1, and 38:7 attaches the title “sons of God” to angels.

Look for a moment where this misinterpretation takes its followers. The “giants in the earth in those days,” they suppose, were angel-half-breeds, being half angel and half human. That is the reason, they suppose, that God had to destroy the world with a flood, to eliminate these half-breeds. Further, they suppose, that these nasty angels bred with animals as well, that is why God had to destroy all the animals in the flood. This all makes logical sense to them, but defies the real reason for the flood as given in Genesis 6:5-7 wherein the depravity of man is in view.

Their suppositions continue on a more outlandish level; since

Genesis 6:4 says there were giants “and also after that” it must be referring to the giants, Hebrew *Nephilim* <05303>, sons of Anak, that were found in the promised land. Now by a rule of first mention we all know where giants come from, they are angel-half-breeds and there they are opposing God, in the promised land. These sons of Anak were no doubt, they suppose, angel-half-breeds. Not only that but Deuteronomy 2 refers to a “land of giants” or a “tribe of giants” Hebrew *Rephaim* <07497>. The giants are again taking over and destroying mankind they are the archnemesis of God, they suppose, and it has nothing to do with man and his depravity.

Their suppositions continue and reach even more outlandish levels, since those angel-half-breed giants are the theme of Bible times you can be certain that they are operating inside of our governments today. Suddenly the end-times teachings are adrift with tans-humans, reptilian-elites, conspiracy theorists, and a myriad of books by Steve Quayle. All this because some sincere Bible students thought “sons of God” in Genesis 6 might be referring to angels, and Satan built a cult out of those misgivings.

The interpretation, that “sons of God” here refers to believers is preferred for several reasons. The Lord Jesus Christ says angels are sexless (Matthew 22:30). In the line of Seth, wherein “then began men to call upon the name of the LORD” (Genesis 4:26), believers might well be referred to as “sons of God” as in the six New Testament references (John 1:12, Romans 8:14, 19, Philippians 2:15, 1John 3:1, 2). In Deut. 7:1-3 God warns the children of Israel about the same deviant behavior that is referenced in Genesis 6:2-4: Deut 7:1 *“When the LORD thy God shall bring thee into the land whither thou goest to possess it, and hath cast out many nations before thee, ... thou shalt smite them, and utterly destroy them; thou shalt make no covenant with them, nor shew mercy unto them: Neither shalt thou make marriages with them; thy daughter thou shalt not give unto his son, nor his daughter shalt thou take unto thy son.”* And in Isaiah 43:6-7 God calls those called by his name, sons. Such an understanding is far better than the *Nephilim-phobia* set in motion by by the other.

Most markedly, then, the latter is the preferred interpretation

because the former sets in motion a false teaching that has nothing whatsoever to do with the overall theme of the Holy Bible, that our Lord Jesus Christ came into the world to seek and to save that which was lost. Even the remotest idea that angel-half-breeds are somehow involved in man's failings is contrary to that theme.

Chapter 4 The Depravity of Man

The depravity of man addresses the natural condition of unregenerate man in regards to his moral perversion or his impairment of virtue and moral principles. The consideration of man's depravity would be straight forward were it not for the Presbyterian doctrine that describes and defends mans "Total Depravity." John Calvin supposed that God was done with Israel, that the catholic church was to assume all the previous promises made to Israel, and that the church was therefore now the new "elect of God." All of Calvin's errors about election, a catholic church, and his covenant theology may be traced to this misgiving, and the Presbyterian TULIP model that attempted to systematize and legitimize his error included what they thought was man's Total Depravity. In this system of error about election and predestination "man's inability to submit to God and do right is total," and ergo Presbyterians, Calvinists, and Reformed theology totally eliminate man's free will, and the Bible's "Whosoever wills." Herein it will be shown that "Since Adam fell, every son and daughter of Adam is averse to good and inclined to evil,"²⁶ man's depravity does not fit their definition of "total." The refuting of the Presbyterian's TULIP is left for another effort²⁷ but

26 Thornton, "Repentance", New Haven, 1834, pg 18

27 Edward G Rice, "*Reformed Theology's Reformations Are Not Producing A Biblical Systematic Theology*," A Thesis Presented to the Faculty of Louisiana Baptist University in Partial Fulfillment of the Requirements for Master of Theological Studies, December 2011. [Available at www.gsbaptistchurch.com/seminary/master_thesis/thesis_reformed.html or <http://www.lulu.com/spotlight/GSBaptistChurch> accessed 8/26/2018]

"*The Biblical Doctrine of Election and Predestination - Why a Baptist will never hold to a doctrine of Calvinism or Augustinian Predestination*", LuLu Selfpublishing, 2009. [available at

something needs to be said about man's depravity in a work considering anthropology.

Much more could be said about the depravity of man, but an excellent perspective can be gained by looking through the eyes of a capable author of an hundred-and-eighty years ago. In 1834 J. Thornton's book "Repentance" was published with the full title "Repentance Explained and Enforced; Being a Serious Appeal to Every Man's Conscience, On Its Nature, Necessity and Evidences." When one finds an hundred-and-eighty year old work that addresses a subject it is usually a good read, and in this day when many run to and fro and knowledge is increased (Daniel 12:4) such works are readily available in my study. J. Thornton gives this exceptional discourse on man's depravity:

On the State of the Impenitent. [p13]

I will tell you, reader, in the beginning, what is my design in this little book: I do not intend to amuse you with curious questions, or engage you in fierce disputes, and vain janglings; but to show you the things that belong to your peace. You must soon die, and bid farewell to the world. You are gliding down the stream of time, into a shoreless and bottomless ocean. It is clear, from the word of God, that after death you must be either eternally happy, or eternally miserable. It is as plain as words can make it, that if you go on hardened in sin to the last, your precious immortal soul will be certainly lost, and lost forever. I therefore beg you serious attention to the subject of repentance. No subject is more fervently and urgently pressed upon men in the holy scriptures. Every messenger that God has sent to perishing sinners, has brought a call to repentance. Every instance of careless and profane cut off by death, is a loud call to the living. Every affliction in your own person, is a call from God to repentance. ...

[p16] The impenitent are in a state of spiritual

http://www.gsbaptistchurch.com/elect/election_predest_man.pdf or <http://www.lulu.com/spotlight/GSBaptistChurch> accessed 8/26/2018]

darkness.

It is said, *This is life eternal, to know the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom he hath sent.* But sin is a dark cloud upon the mind, a thick veil drawn over the heart, which excludes the precious light of divine truth. *The natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God, for they are foolishness to him; neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.* 1 Cor. ii. 14. To one who is in this state, the clearest displays of the power, wisdom, justice, and goodness of God; and the fullest manifestations of the love, compassion, faithfulness, and glory of Christ, are only as the beauties of a fine prospect to a blind man. While the understanding, which is the window of the mind, remains shut, all within must be dreary darkness. When there is no motion of love and gratitude in the heart, no breathing of fervent prayer from the lips towards God, the soul is dead in trespasses and sins. How strong, and yet how just, is the language of the prophet: *Darkness hath covered the earth, and gross darkness the people.* What can more truly describe the ignorance and stupidity of the carnal mind, than these words?...

[p18] The impenitent are in a state of distance from God.

In the scriptures all are represented as wanderers from God. *We all like sheep have gone astray, we have turned every one to his own way.* Isa. liii. 6. *We have forsaken the fountain of living waters, and hewed out cisterns, broken cisterns, that can hold no water.* Jer. ii. 3. Since Adam fell, every son and daughter of Adam is averse to good and inclined to evil. Not only is the understanding darkened, but the will is perverted, and the affections are corrupted. Instead of seeking happiness from God, the everlasting spring of all blessings, we naturally seek it in the foolish devices and imaginations of our own hearts.

The distance from God, our Lord sets forth in a

just comparison, Matt. vii. 13,14. *Wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there are that go in thereat....*

[p21] The impenitent are in a state of deep pollution.

There is a generation that are pure in their own eyes, and yet are not washed from their filthiness. It has been said, "Man is a polished mirror, with one slight speck, vanity; and that speck is wiped off by death." According to this fine flattering comparison, sin, it seems, must not be called a blot, nor even a stain, but a speck, a *slight* speck. Let us now examine what the word of God says respecting human nature, in its present state. He who sees into the heart, and will be the judge of all in the last day, must be allowed capable of giving the most just account of man. Turn to Gen. vi. 5-12. *And GOD saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually.* If it should be thought this passage is a proof of the depravity of those only, who lived before the flood, turn to Job xv. 14,15,16. *What is man that he should be clean, or he that is born of a woman, that he should be righteous? Behold, he putteth no trust in his saints, yea, the heavens are not clean in his sight; how much more abominable and filthy is man, which drinketh in iniquity like water?* Our Lord, who perfectly knew what was in man, opens that fountain of corruption, that forge of iniquity – the carnal heart. Mark viii. 21,22,23. *For from within, out of the heart of man, proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders, thefts, covetousness, wickedness, lasciviousness, and evil eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness; all these evil things come from within, and defile the man.* Nor can it be truly said, that some are free from depravity and sin. Every branch from the stock of Adam is corrupt, though every branch does not bring forth the same quantity of bad fruit. For proof

of this, look into Rom. iii. 9-12. 9 *What then? are we better than they? No, in no wise: for we have before proved both Jews and Gentiles, that they are all under sin; As it is written, There is none righteous, no, not one. ...*

[p24] The impenitent are in a state of guilt and condemnation.

It is awful to see a man, who has broken the laws of his country, trembling in his chains, as he hears the sentence which declares him guilty. Condemned to die for his crimes, he feels a thousand horrors, before the hour of execution comes. But that man is in a far more dreadful condition, whom the sentence of the divine law dooms to eternal misery. God, as a God of justice, will not suffer his authority to be trampled upon by the wicked, without calling them to an account for it. Sin, says the apostle John, is the transgression of the law. And God keeps a book of remembrance, in which every vicious deed, every idle word, and every sinful thought is registered. now consider that it is said, “Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things written in then book of the law, to do them.” And can you believe this without trembling? Is there nothing to alarm you in the wrath of the Almighty? Can you sleep undisturbed, in carnal ease, while the curse of the most high God hangs over your guilty head? But, perhaps, you think yourself clear of the charge brought against you. When the words of the law are repeated, you are ready to cry, All these things have I kept from my youth up: I never committed theft, adultery, nor murder. But is it not possible, you may be too hasty in this matter? Take the trouble of weighing what Christ says of the law in Matt. v. 22-35. There you will find, that slightly uttering the name of God, is profaneness; a wanton look, is adultery; anger, without a just cause, is murder; a grasping eagerness after the world, is covetousness and idolatry. By proceeding in this way,

you will be convinced, that, although men's notions of duty and sin are very narrow, *God's commandments are exceedingly broad*. If the scriptures are to be believed, it is an undeniable truth, that, by the deeds of the law shall no man living be justified. Not the least room is left for self-righteous pretenses and pleas. Every mouth is stopped, and the whole world is become guilty before God. There is no way of escaping the awful judgments of God, but by faith in the Lord Jesus Christ. Rom. viii. 1. If you remain still in impenitence and unbelief, you are yet under the curse. *He that believeth not, is condemned already, and the wrath of God abideth on him*. John iii. 18-36.

[p26] The impenitent are in a state of bondage and misery.

How wretched was the condition of the Israelites in Egypt, when they were not only under the iron rod of Pharaoh, the great tyrant, but also under the smarting scourges of those petty tyrants, the task masters! Well might they sigh and sicken over their hard labors and unpitied woes. but the state of unconverted men is far worse. They sell themselves to do the vilest drudgery. They are the slaves of Satan, and the servants of sin.

Paul declares that those who oppose themselves to the gospel are led captive by the devil at his will. And whither are you likely to be conducted by such a leader? What reward can you expect to receive from such a master? He will draw you on, by little and little, into his snares and fetters till you are as fast bound as if girt with chains of brass. He will promise many sweets, and give you apples of Sodom; he will show you the glories of the world, and plunge you in the horrors of despair.

The apostle Peter speaks of some who boast of their liberty, and yet are the servants of corruption. Such persons yield up their powers and members, as

instruments of unrighteousness, to sin. Rom. vi. 13. And O, what a wretched state is this! Yet every impenitent man is tied down by the base customs of an evil world, and given up to serve divers lusts and pleasures, those cruel task-masters which are never satisfied.

Let it never be forgotten, that sorrow follows sin, as the shadow does the substance. Peter joins together *the bond of iniquity and the gall of bitterness*. Solomon says, *The way of the transgressors is hard*; and truly such as travel in that way, not only forsake their own mercies, but multiply their miseries at every step. Be not deceived with appearances. While men are so jovial in their revels, how often, even when the face is gay, is the heart sad! Colonel Gardiner, while he was eagerly pursuing the vanities and follies of the world, appeared always so full of life and spirit, that he got the name of the *happy rake*; but, after he became a new man, he declared, that, at the very time when he seemed so merry that other envied his pleasures, he was often so miserable in his own mind, as to wish himself a dog! It was a saying of Augustine, “The pleasures of sin are momentary; but its punishments are eternal.” These pleasures, even while they last, are mixed with bitterness.

I grant that there are some, who seem so completely stupified, as not in the least to feel their wretchedness. But a time is coming, that will awake them from sleep, and put all their dreams to flight. Hear the prosperous worldling saying to himself, *Soul, thou hast much foods laid up for many years; take thine ease; eat, drink, and be merry*. Luke xii. 19. But hold, vain boaster! those good are not thy own. He who lent them, has not given up his right, nor forgotten his claim. Those many years set down in they reckoning, are not written in the book of God's

decrees. Hark! a messenger knocks at the door. *This night thy soul is required of thee!* In stead of taking they ease, now go take thy trial. Amidst all the stores prepared for they perishing body, what provision hast thou for the immortal soul? Alas, poor wretch! thou hast had no shelter for it, but a refuge of lies; no clothing, but filthy rags; no food but empty husks. [Boston's Fourfold State]. O miserable condition, for the soul to be hurried unpardoned, unpurified, and unprepared, into the presence of a righteous and all-seeing Judge!

Let what has been said be applied to promote self-examination and humility.

If such as has just been described is the state of the impenitent, let me entreat you, reader, to examine whether it be your present condition. ... [p29]²⁸

This hundred-and-eighty year old glimpse into the state of the impenitent gives a profound insight to man's depravity. It does so without assaulting the free-will of man or the whosoever-wills of our Lord Jesus Christ, indeed it enhances both. Thornton states "Since Adam fell, every son and daughter of Adam is averse to good and inclined to evil. Not only is the understanding darkened, but the will is perverted, and the affections are corrupted. Instead of seeking happiness from God, the everlasting spring of all blessings, we naturally seek it in the foolish devices and imaginations of our own hearts." That pretty much captures what needs to be said about the depravity of man.

28 Thornton, "Repentance," New Haven, 1834, pg 13, 16-17, 18, 21, 24, 26-29.

Chapter 5 The Seven Dispensations for Mankind

One cannot account for a thorough coverage of Biblical anthropology without a consideration of the great stages of stewardship wherewith mankind has been and will be tested. A systematic review of the whole of Scripture discovers seven distinct stewardship tests for man. Since the concept of the progressive testing of man in these stewardship phases, properly called dispensations, insults and assaults Roman Catholic Church doctrine, and that of its Protestant offspring, the Biblical basis for this teaching needs careful development up front.

The idea of a stewardship for man is not foreign to our Bible. Our Lord Jesus Christ defines such a stewardship in Luke 12:36-37 & 40, *“And ye yourselves like unto men that wait for their lord, when he will return from the wedding; that when he cometh and knocketh, they may open unto him immediately. Blessed are those servants, whom the lord when he cometh shall find watching: verily I say unto you, that he shall gird himself, and make them to sit down to meat, and will come forth and serve them.... Be ye therefore ready also: for the Son of man cometh at an hour when ye think not.”* When Peter asks about such teaching, *“Lord, speakest thou this parable unto us, or even to all?”*, our Lord replies, *“Who then is that faithful and wise steward <3623>, whom his lord shall make ruler over his household, to give them their portion of meat in due season?”* This word for *steward* that Christ uses is the Greek word, οἰκονομος, *oikonomos*, meaning the manager of household or of household affairs. Our Lord uses it again in Luke 16 to describe the affairs of an unjust steward, and the illustration of a steward left certain responsibilities is a common thread in Jesus' teachings (Matt. 20, 21, 25, Mark 12, Luke 12, 16, 20, et al.). The Apostle Paul uses the principle in 1Cor. 4:1-2, *“Let a man so account of us, as of the ministers of Christ, and stewards <3623> of the mysteries of God. Moreover it is required in stewards<3623>, that a man be found faithful.”*, and again in Titus 1:7, *“For a bishop must be blameless, as the steward <3623> of God; not selfwilled, not soon angry, not given*

to wine, no striker, not given to filthy lucre.” And the Apostle Peter implores us, “*As every man hath received the gift, even so minister the same one to another, as good stewards <3623> of the manifold grace of God*”(1Peter 4:10).

This idea of a stewardship is directly connected to the Bible's teaching about dispensations. The stewardship that our Lord described in Luke 16 uses the Greek word οικονομία, *oikonomia*, which comes from the previous root word οικονομοσ, *oikonomos*, and translates to our English word *dispensation*, i.e. stewardship and dispensation are synonymous, a steward being “Someone who manages property or other affairs for someone else.”²⁹ The Apostle Paul speaks of a “*dispensation of the gospel*” (1Cor. 9:17), a “*dispensation of the fullness of times*” (Eph. 1:10), a “*dispensation of the grace of God*” (Eph. 3:2), and a “*dispensation of God*” (Col 1:25). All these employ the idea of stewardship. God leaves man, managing his affairs for a period of time, then holds him responsible for his stewardship in that dispensation. This is most aptly illustrated in the Garden of Eden where man was left with a rule to obey, he disobeyed and was held accountable. This might be called a dispensation of innocence, or freedom from guilt, because that is how it started.

Noah Webster's 1828 Dictionary of American English defines a *steward* as, “A man employed in great families to manage the domestic concerns, superintend the other servants, collect the rents or income, keep the accounts, etc. See Gen 15:2 and 43:19.” and gives one definition of *dispensation* as, “That which is dispensed or bestowed; a system of principles and rites enjoined; as the Mosaic dispensation; the gospel dispensation; including, the former the Levitical law and rites; the latter the scheme of redemption by Christ.”³⁰ Two hundred years ago there were Bible students who knew the Bible's teachings about various dispensations. It is perfectly clear that Christ started a new covenant. It was perfectly clear that the rules in place after Moses came down from Mount Sinai, in 1492 BC, on that Pentecost

29 WordWeb 8, Princeton University, 2006, s.v. Steward.

30 Noah Webster's 1828 Dictionary of American English, a public domain module of “theWord.net” version 5.0, 2003, s.v. Steward, Dispensation.

Sunday, were changed by our Lord Jesus Christ.

Dispensationalism clarifies distinct periods of time wherein God's rules-for, or dealings-with, mankind change. This categorically happened four times before Mount Sinai.

C.I. Scofield (1843-1921), genius Bible scholar and one of the founders of Christian fundamentalism, is not the founder of dispensationalism, nor is John Nelson Darby (1800-1882), the Anglo-Irish Bible teacher and renowned Plymouth Brethren. These men popularized, advanced and defended the clear Bible teachings of dispensationalism, but Bible doctrine does not have human founders.

Scofield documents dispensationalism very clearly. The seven dispensations that the Bible portrays are 1) Innocence (Gen. 1:28), 2) Conscience (Gen.3:23), 3) Human Government (Gen. 8:20), 4) Promise (Gen. 12:1), 5) Law (Exod. 19:8), 6) Grace (John 1:17, Eph. 3:1-6), and 7) Kingdom (Eph. 1:10). In each of these dispensations man is given a set of rules or expectations from his Creator, and given a period of time wherein he is held accountable. Each dispensation ends in mans utter failure; Innocence – the Fall, Conscience – the first born man becomes the first first degree murderer and “the imaginations and thoughts of (man's) heart” brought about the world flood, Human Government – Tower of Babel, Promise – Bondage in Egypt, Law – Crucifixion of our Lord, Grace – As it was in the days of Sodom, and Kingdom – After the thousand years, Gog and Magog is again deceived. “The Dispensations are distinguished, exhibiting the majestic, progressive order of the divine dealings of God with humanity, 'the increasing purpose' which runs through and links together the ages, from the beginning of the life of man to the end in eternity.”³¹ These distinct dispensations are important for one who would “Study to shew thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth”(2Tim 2:15). For example “*Thou shalt not suffer a witch to live. Whosoever lieth with a beast shall surely be put to death. He that sacrificeth unto any god, save unto the LORD only, he shall be utterly destroyed. Thou shalt neither vex a stranger, nor oppress*

31 Cyrus Ingerson Scofield, “*The Scofield Study Bible,*” 1909, iii.

him: for ye were strangers in the land of Egypt” out of Exodus 22:18-21, belongs in the dispensation of Law, given to Israel, and are not applicable in the dispensation of Grace wherein we live. Indeed discerning God's dispensations is essential for “rightly dividing the word of truth.”

Understand here that Roman Catholic, Orthodox, and Protestant theologians generally despise this Bible teaching about dispensations. They hold that the catholic church is robbed in all the promises given to God's chosen nation, Israel (replacement theology), that God only has one covenant (covenant theology), and that such teachings about dispensations only came up lately and are heretical. The wide gate and the broad path, with a majority of “orthodox” Bible students, is delinquent in exploring or accepting the truths of dispensationalism, but all sixty-six books of God's holy Word standing behind this clear understanding. It especially clarifies end times teachings wherewith Roman Catholic and Protestant theologians remain clueless.

While these covenant theologians dictate a single covenant aimed at their catholic church understanding, the Bible student can readily discern eight distinct covenants that God makes with man. In the Garden of Eden was an Edenic Covenant (Gen 1-3); after the fall there was an Adamic Covenant (Genesis 3:15); after the flood God made a covenant with Noah that one might call the Noahic Covenant (Genesis 9:1); God made a covenant with Abraham called an Abrahamic Covenant (Genesis 15:18); God gave commandments, judgments, and ordinances to Israel (Exod 20:1-26, 21:1-24:11, 24:12-31:18) in what one might call a Mosaic Covenant (Exod 19:25) or a Law Covenant; God promised to return Israel to his promised land in what one might call a Palestinian Covenant (Deut. 30:3); God promised David's line an everlasting kingdom one would call it a Davidic Covenant (2Sam 7:16), and Christ defines his eternally complete New Covenant (Heb 8:8). C. I. Scofield summarizes these eight covenants succinctly:

The Eight Covenants, Summary: (1) Edenic Covenant (Gen. 1:26-28, *note*) conditioned the life of man in innocency. (2) The Adamic Covenant (Gen. 3:14-19,

note) establishes the principle of human government. (4) The Abrahamic Covenant (Gen. 15:18, *note*) founds the nation of Israel, and confirms with specific additions, the Adamic promise of redemption. (5) The Mosaic Covenant (Exod 19:25, *note*) condemns all men, “for that all have sinned.” (6) The Palestinian Covenant (Deut. 28:1-30:3, *note*) secures the final restoration and restoration of Israel. (7) The Davidic Covenant (2Sam. 7:8-17, *note*) establishes the perpetuity of the Davidic family (fulfilled in Christ, Mt. 1:1; Lk. 1:31-33; Rom. 1:3), and of the Davidic kingdom, over Israel and over the whole earth; to be fulfilled in and by Christ (2Sam. 7:8-17; Zech. 12:8; Lk. 1:31-33; Acts 15:14-17; 1Cor. 15:24). (8) The New Covenant rests upon the sacrifice of Christ, and secures the eternal blessedness, under the Abrahamic Covenant (Gal. 3:13-29), of all who believe. It is absolutely unconditional, and, since no responsibility is by it committed to man, it is final and irreversible.³²

Once the covenant theologian's single covenant ideology is refuted, and that blinder is removed for a fresh look at the larger picture of scripture's revelation, one can clearly see the dispensations wherein man is tested.

Dispensationalism clarifies distinct periods of time wherein God's rules for, or dealings with, mankind change, and understanding the upcoming transition to the promised Kingdom age clarifies the premillennial, pretribulation rapture of the church. The Roman Catholic, Orthodox, Protestant, and Reformed “religions” have no clear endtime doctrines, but they are united in their hatred for the doctrine of dispensationalism and the premillennial, pretribulation rapture of the Church. These Bible doctrines completely confound their replacement and covenant theology.

Catholic, Orthodox and Protestant naysayers to both the premillennial, pretribulation rapture of the Church and to the

32 C.I. Scofield, “*The Scofield Reference Bible*”, Oxford University Press, Inc., 1909, pg 1297-1298, s.v. Heb. 8:8 *note 2*.

dispensational teachings of Scripture in general, suppose that John Nelson Darby founded these things and that they are heretical. They say, “In 1859, John Nelson Darby first arrived in the United States with his doctrines of pretrib and dispensationalism.”³³ Dispensationalism destroys their three gods: replacement theology, covenant theology, and the catholic church. And dispensationalism systematically considers the upcoming end of the age of grace, and the transition to the kingdom age wherein Christ shall sit on the literal throne of David in the literal city of Jerusalem. These things are contrary to the teachings of Rome, errant teachings that are still routed deep in Protestant and Reformed theology.

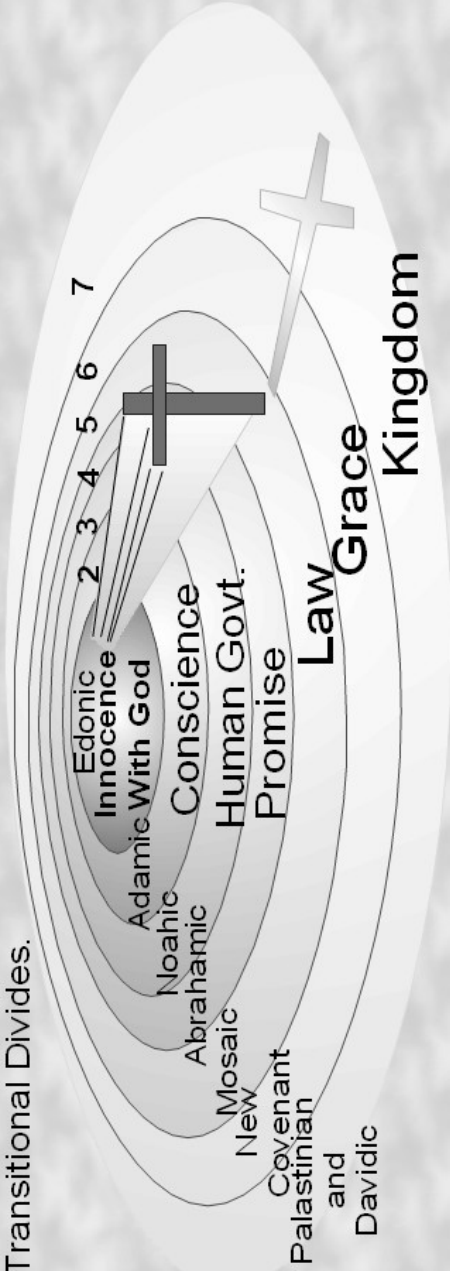
Much more needs to be said about these dispensations. In this work on anthropology, the doctrine of man, it is necessary to be systematically aware of their presence in the big picture. Mankind is given thorough and complete testing and opportunity in seven distinct phases, covering seven thousand years, and is repeatedly found lacking in each stewardship and dispensation. Dispensationalism is key to comprehending the larger picture of all of Scripture.

33 From multiple sources over the author's fifty years of Bible study.

A Systematic Theology for the 21st Century

Dispensationalism

- Why Should I Know it?**
- ▶ **7 Dispensations?**
- ▶ When was this text written?
- ▶ To Whom was it written?
- ▶ In What Dispensation (age)?
- ▶ For what Purpose?
- ▶ Law of Context.
- ▶ Distinction of Truths.
- ▶ Observance of Great Transitional Divides.
- 8 Distinct Covenants.**
- ▶ Edenic Gen 1-3
- ▶ Adamic Gen 3:15
- ▶ Noahic Gen 9:1
- ▶ Abrahamic Gen 15:18
- ▶ Mosaic Exod 19:25
- ▶ Palestinian Deut 30:3
- ▶ Davidic 2Sam7:16
- ▶ New Heb 8:8



A Systematic Theology for the 21st Century

Chapter 6 Critique of Other Systematic Theology – Anthropologies

Critiques of some other systematic theology anthropology works are taken directly from the authors “Advanced Systematic Theology II TH802 Written Report, A Written Report Presented to the Faculty of Louisiana Baptist University In Partial Fulfillment of the Requirements for Doctorate of Philosophy in Theological Studies,” wherein Dr. Chafer's six volumes of “Systematic Theology” was the text assigned for analysis and comparison to other theology works. The critiques are at times harsh and often pointed but are not intended to discredit in any way the genius of Dr. Lewis Sperry Chafer (1871-1952), founder and first president of Dallas Theological Seminary, the genius of Charles Hodge (1797-1878), a Presbyterian Minister and Princeton theologian called “the father of the printed systematic theology,” or the genius of Augustus H. Strong (1836-1921), an American Baptist Pastor and president of Rochester Theological Seminary. Each of their magnum opus, “Systematic Theology” works embody the best of the theological reflection and thought in their generations.

Critique of Chafer's Anthropology

Critique of Chafer's Chap XI & XII Introduction to Anthropology (125-129) & The Origin of Man (130-159)³⁴

If Dr. Chafer had made his last paragraph his first paragraph he could have cut out fourteen pages of add-nausea. None of this chapter recites God's aspect, and actually represses God's revelation about the origin of man. It is apologetic to the evolutionist, apologetic to the humanist, apologetic to the philosopher; and it is apologetic to the archeologist and the

34 Edward G. Rice, "ADVANCED SYSTEMATIC THEOLOGY II TH802 WRITTEN REPORT- A Written Report Presented to the Faculty of Louisiana Baptist University, In Partial Fulfillment of the Requirements for Doctorate of Philosophy in Theological Studies," Dec 2013.

geologist; for crying out loud, it is even apologetic to the philologist,³⁵ because that philologist, the historical linguist, “knows” it has taken a hundred thousand years to evolve the human language to where it is today!

There is a need for apologetics and some small amount of apologetic might find its way into a systematic theology, but it should not be the focus of a systematic theology in any arena, and especially not as concerning the origins of man. Dr. Chafer is writing a text that will appeal to 70+ denominations, all of which Dallas Theological Seminary strives to appease and accommodate. Here he does it well, by saying nothing of significance in a chapter that should be very fundamental, very straightforward and very enlightening.

The whole flavor of a neoevangelical readily seeps from Dr. Chafer's chapter on the origin of man. The series of Bible conferences springing from Niagara, New York at the close of the 19th century (1833-1897) brought both Fundamentalism and Biblical Dispensationalism into the lime light in America. The Fundamentalist became known for separating, holding anti-denominational (independent autonomous local churches), anticlerical (no clergy) and anti-creedal (no creed but the Bible) stances and defending five fundamentals of faith.³⁶ Any departure

35 Chafer, *Systematic Theology Vol 2*, 141.

36 “The twentieth century began with a tumultuous conservative uproar over the infiltration of numerous denominations by liberalism. The severity of the situation demanded immediate action. Heretical teachings were captivating and corrupting entire churches, schools and related organizations within multiplied denominations. Therefore, a coalition of interdenominational brethren, following a number of conferences, united around the five 'fundamentals' of the faith. They were:

1. The inspiration and inerrancy of Scripture
2. The deity of Jesus Christ
3. The virgin birth of Christ
4. The substitutionary, atoning work of Christ on the cross
5. The physical resurrection and the personal bodily return of Christ to the earth.

“The adherents to these five 'fundamental' truths were naturally labeled 'fundamentalists.' Those opposing them were called 'liberals.' “The men joining together around these five points (commonly called 'the doctrine of Christ') were from varied and diversified religious backgrounds. Thus, this

from a fundamental tenant would constitute apostasy and result in separation. There was a distinct movement away from such staunch separation, neoevangicals proposed that the apostate and unbelieving cultures must be constructively engaged. Rather than publicly confronting Church apostasy and separating from it, the neoevangical advanced repairing it with inclusiveness. They supposed that social acceptance and intellectual respectability would be more effective on the perverse generation in need of correction. Fundamentalists soon dubbed them as the neoevangicals.³⁷

Dr. Chafer is wholly neoevangical and his writing about the origins of man strives for intellectual respectability and social acceptance in a perverse world of infidelity and Church apostasy. Dallas Theological Seminary is founded on such neoevangical principle and is, thus, pandering to 70+ denominations in its outreach. Consequently they must be very careful, never confrontational, in their declaration of truth, which never reaches a state implied in the term *declaration*. A true Baptist is a fundamentalist, even if they retired the phrase, and a true Baptist need not exercise such careful avoidance of confrontation.

Louisiana Baptist Theological Seminary, like so many Baptist seminaries that started out right, is on the brink. It may at any moment forsake its Baptist fundamental and separatist heritage and embrace intellectual elitism, wherein it begins an irrecoverable slide down the steep slope of neoevangicalism. Its assignment of a thoroughly neoevangical systematic theology in its theological studies is an indicator of its inclination. Its disclaimer, that LBTS does not endorse the entire content of every text book used, cannot disengage this Baptist theological seminary from that dangerous

amalgamation of 'first generation fundamentalists' included Presbyterians, Baptists, Reformers, Reformed Episcopalians, Lutherans, Methodists, Anglicans, Congregationalists, and Wesleyan Holiness brothers. The astounding thing about the members of this interdenominational movement was their love for one another." (Dr. Jack Van Impe, *Heart Disease in Christ's Body*, pp. 127-128).

37 The term *neoevangical* was popularized by one Harold Ockenga in 1947, neoevangicals were then embarrassed to be called fundamentalists. (From www.theopedia.com accessed 18 Nov 2013).

slippery slope. Forces at play in its desire for intellectual respectability have already stepped over the brink and threaten to drag (or have indeed already dragged) the whole university and seminary over an irrecoverable line. Neoevangelicalism has swallowed the majority of Baptist Universities and all previous Baptist Seminaries. Jesus' warning in Matthew 7 has application for institutions as well as for the souls of men: "*Enter ye in at the strait gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat: Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it.*" In a university sense, few there be that stay on a straight, fundamental, Baptist way. LBTS shows signs of veering from the straight, narrow way.

Dr. Chafer's neoevangelicalism aside, his "introduction to anthropology" and his "origin of man" cannot hold a candle to Baptist theologian Emery H. Bancroft's *Elemental Theology, Doctrinal and Conservative*³⁸ Bancroft's work is adequately positive completely Biblical and very fundamental. His first sentence on creation contains a negative lead in "There is no trustworthy evidence that man came from beneath as a product of life forces or potencies of the material universe."³⁹ Bancroft, thus presents the fact of creation rather than the theory of creation. The latter track is Chafer's neoevangelical approach and mimics Augustus Strong's previous approach.⁴⁰ Strong published prior to the birth of fundamentalism and the onslaught of neoevangelicalism, but his flavor is in general neoevangelical, i.e. tiptoeing through apostasy, being careful not to ruffle any apostate

38 Emery H. Bancroft, *Elemental Theology*, 1932, Baptist Bible Seminary, 1945, 60, Zondervan 1977, 231-244.

39 *ibid.*, 231.

40 Although Strong was consistently orthodox, he did use the results of modern critical scholarship more than, for example, his near Presbyterian contemporary Charles Hodge. Also, unlike Hodge, Strong was comfortable with the idea that God may have created the world through the processes of evolution. In the 1907 edition of his theology, Strong summarized his views on modern thought: "Neither evolution nor the higher criticism has any terrors to one who regards them as part of Christ's creating and education process." from <http://www.ccel.org/ccel/strong> accessed 2 Aug 2010

or evolutionist's feathers. Bancroft makes no apology for the truth, and presents a clearly separatist flavor of the fundamentalist. His work, however, is closer to a Bible Doctrines work than a Systematic Theology work. This seems to be the state of all Baptist theology efforts. A truly Biblical, i.e. Baptist, systematic theology is still lacking in publication. If such an effort would be undertaken it would be more than Emery H. Bancroft included in his 1932, *Elemental Theology*. It is indeed, most exceptional, but alas elemental, rather than systematic. To extend Bancroft's work from a 1932 *Elemental* effort to A Systematic Theology for the 21st Century, one which overpowers the neoevangelical works of Chafer and Geisler, one could start with Bancroft's excellent doctrines format and add the pertinent systematic endeavors (see this authors Prolegomena for a better description of that challenge).

The basic outline for a Systematic Theologies Anthropology section might start with a robustness found in Bancroft's: The Doctrine of Man (Anthropology).⁴¹ That outline is recited below:

I. Creation

A. The Fact of Creation

- i. Mans Creation Decreed
- ii. Mans Creation Declared

B. The Method of Creation

- i. Negatively Considered
- ii. Positively Considered

II. Original Condition

A. Possessed the Image of God

- i. Does not denote physical likeness
- ii. May mean a formal likeness, a likeness in form
- iii. It could refer to a triune likeness- tripartite being, vs
Triune Being
- iv. It doubtless includes the personal image
- v. It must involve endless being with which God has
endowed man
- vi. It certainly means intellectual and moral likeness:

41 Emery H. Bancroft, *Elemental Theology*, 1932, Baptist Bible Seminary, 1945, 60, Zondervan 1977, 231-244.

B. Possessed Intellectual Faculties

C. Possessed a Holy Moral Nature

III. Probation

A. The Meaning of Probation

B. The Fact of Probation

C. The Period of Probation

IV. The Fall

A. The Fact of the Fall

B. The Manner of the Fall

i. The Tempter

ii. The Temptation

a) Woman, unprotected and near the forbidden

b) Insinuating question implied doubt of God's Word

c) Woman replying to and parleying with the slanderer

d) Woman tampering with the Word of God

e) Serpent's open denial of punishment for sin and accusing God of lying, selfishness, jealousy, degrading and lording over.

f) Woman believing the tempter lust of eye, lust of flesh, pride of life

g) Obeying the tempter

h) Becoming a tempter to her husband who yielded undeceived.

C. The Results of the Fall

i. To Adam and Eve in particular

a) Consciousness of nakedness and sense of shame

b) A craven fear of God

c) Expulsion from the garden

ii. To the race in general

a) Ground cursed to not yield good alone

b) Sorrow and pain to woman in childbearing

c) All men are sinners and resting under condemnation

d) Physical and spiritual death and threatened penalty of eternal death

e) Unredeemed men are in helpless captivity to sin and Satan

Depicting the difference in a Biblical doctrine work and a Biblical systematic theology work is the necessary work of a Prolegomena. That effort is begun in the draft Prolegomena for the 21st Century by this author. Dr. John F. Walvoord, who succeeded Dr. Chafer as President of Dallas Theological Seminary, described Dr. Chafer's Systematic Theology as “without question an epoch in the history of Christian Doctrine... a complete and unabridged Systematic Theology.”⁴² This author disagrees with that assessment and contends that a truly Biblical systematic theology is still want to be published.

Critique of Chafers Material/Immaterial Part of Man

A Critique of Chafer's Chap XIII-XIV The Material / Immaterial Part of Man (144-197)⁴³

Lewis Sperry Chafer's poor coverage of mans origin and inadequate organization of his anthropology section takes a turn for the worse in this chapter. Infidel, Philosopher, and Roman Catholic have decreed that man is made up of a material part and an immaterial part; God's revelation makes no such simplistic distinction. If man “made in the image and likeness of God” means anything, and if trinity means anything, then man is more than material and immaterial, he is body, soul, and spirit. The Roman Catholic doctrine that man has a material part to be dealt with and an immaterial part to be considered separately, has overwhelmed Chafer's neoevangelical leanings. His Systematic Theology has now become a book of Roman Catholic doctrine.

Chafer's propensity to teach Roman Catholic Doctrine in these two chapters makes this section all the more feckless. How the human body actually produces an immaterial part, traducian theory, various elements, capacities and faculties of an immaterial part of man carries such insignificance that it hardly matters that his three key sources are the Encyclopedia Britannica,⁴⁴

42 Article contributed by www.walvoord.com, accessed 15 Dec 2013

43 Edward G. Rice, "ADVANCED SYSTEMATIC THEOLOGY II TH802 WRITTEN REPORT," Dec 2013.

44 Chafer, *Systematic Theology*, 191,195.

Presbyterian Theologian Hodge⁴⁵ and Presbyterian Theologian Shedd.⁴⁶ The whole differentiation and characterization of this artificial “material and immaterial parts of man” is extra-Biblical. Chafer is taking neoevangelicalism even further than it is want to go.

Critique of Chafer's State of Innocence and Fall

Critique of Chafer's Chap XV The State of Innocence (198-214).⁴⁷

It does not bode well for a Systematic Theology being systematic or theology when Lewis Sperry Chafer starts his chapter “The State of Innocence” with a philosophical poem by Hollands greatest 17th century poet. Once again Dr. Chafer is allowing his quest for scholarly philosophy to trump his communication of truth. His approach does not herein improve.

A single sentence from his section, “The Responsibility of the First Man” reveals, again, that Chafer's work is wholly unworthy. That sentence, “That the Christian may walk and talk with God, that the guiding and teaching ministry of the Holy Spirit is vouchsafed to him, and that the enabling power to realize God's perfect will and plan is freely bestowed, illustrated, to some measure, the high privilege and responsibility of the first man when no cloud intervened between his Creator and himself.”⁴⁸ Sixty such words of brazen run on passivity, might be found somewhere in poor English prose, but may it never be found in a Systematic Theology book. Our subject is complicated enough, the prose we use must be riddled with simplicity, not with gobbledygook. But Chafer does get worse.

From this point on in his diatribe of verbiage Dr. Chafer makes his whole focus, not the Biblical representation of the state of innocence, as would be proper, but on those who consider the whole book of Genesis allegorical fiction. Certainly there is a

45 Ibid., 175.

46 Ibid., 177.

47 Edward G. Rice, “*ADVANCED SYSTEMATIC THEOLOGY II TH802 WRITTEN REPORT*,” Dec 2013.

48 Ibid., 202.

whole tribe of Evangelicals who have a leaning toward such infidels, but a Systematic Theology which has as its sole authority the infallible, inerrant, plenary, verbally inspired word of God, has little cause to address such an audience. In such an exorbitant waste Dr. Chafer has frittered away another fourteen pages of his six volumes of work.

Critique of Chafer's Chap XVI The Fall (215-223)

There is little purpose in reading Chafer's wordy opinion on the fall of man. One need only take note that he first sites Milton's 'Paradise Lost', followed by the Presbyterian, Dr. Shedd, followed by the Westminster Confession. The overbearing error of all of this is addressed in the authors Prolegomena. It details how theologians with a theology in their heart have failed to follow a basic systematic methodology to get that theology onto paper systematically. Here Chafer does exactly what is condemned in that essay. He uses a scientific method wherein he hypothesizes about the fall of man, then experiments a path through multiple ancient opinions to bring a hypothesis up to theory, and using the same empirical process, to bring theory up to "gospel truth."

Theology is not a science, and in treating it as such, Dr. Chafer abandons the inerrant, infallible, plenary, verbally inspired Holy Bible as his sole source of truth about the fall of man. He follows the outline of Charles Hodge. He follows the scheme of Augustus Strong. Both equally failed on this same level. It is curious that Geisler⁴⁹, a whole generation removed from the neoevangelical start up that engulfed Chafer, does no less. His genius in organizing and communicating his neoevangelical theology in one volume (1680 pages) dwarfs Dr. Chafer's effort in six volumes. (2,700+ pages!) But alas, Norman Geisler has the same failure. These Theologians considered theology a science, and expected if they could "lasso" everything that was ever believed about God, i.e. here the Fall of Man, they would be able to draw the noose tight enough to end up with all the truth and nothing but the truth. Unfortunately this method, somewhat effective for science perhaps, is wholly inadequate for theology. In theology, at the start,

49 Norman L. Geisler, *Systematic Theology in One Volume*, Bethany House, 2002, 3, 4, 5, 11

there is an inerrant, infallible plenary, verbally inspired Holy Bible which is the sole source for the gospel truth. Such does not fit into the scientific method in any form.

Dr. Chafer has “lassoed” a great many sources to frame up his “theory” about the fall of man; unfortunately his noble effort is not really Biblical in nature or in analysis. This unfortunate analysis seems applicable to all of Chafer's *Systematic Theology*.

A Critique of Augustus H. Strong's 1907 Systematic Theology – Anthropology

Some has already been said about the failings of Strong's 1907 Systematic Theology, but his thoroughness and comprehensiveness in handling problems of understanding is still noteworthy. For the sake of completeness his three chapter anthropology outline is repeated below, and it illustrates such comprehensiveness. The primary problems of understanding that he addresses have to do with the misleadings of the Roman theologians that muddled theology previously, and his repeated emphasis on various theories reveals his reliance on the scientific-method to resolve the truth. The Lord Jesus Christ is Truth, and theological truth cannot be resolved via hypothesis, theories, nor scientific methods. Problems of understanding, for the Bible student and theologian, are best resolved by the simply axiom, “God said it, I believe it, and that settles it for me.” Below is Augustus H. Strong's extensive anthropology outline.

PRESENTED TO The University of Toronto a Compendium and
Commonplace-Book
DESIGNED FOR THE USE OF THEOLOGICAL STUDENTS
SYSTEMATIC THEOLOGY BY AUGUSTUS HOPKINS
STRONG, D. D., LL. D.
PRESIDENT AND PROFESSOR OF BIBLICAL THEOLOGY
IN THE ROCHESTER THEOLOGICAL SEMINARY
IN THREE VOLUMES VOLUME II THE DOCTRINE OF
MAN
PHILADELPHIA AMERICAN BAPTIST PUBLICATION

SOCIETY Boston, Chicago
PHILADELPHIA THE GRIFFITH & ROWLAND PRESS 1701
Chestnut Street
COPYRIGHT By AUGUSTUS HOPKINS STRONG 1907.
Published May, 1907.

Table of Contents Volume II:

PART V. ANTHROPOLOGY, OR THE DOCTRINE OF MAN, 465-664

Chapter I. Preliminary, 465-513

I. Man a Creation of God and a Child of God, 465-476

II. Unity of the Race, 476-483

1. Argument from History, 477-478

2. Argument from Language, 478-479

3. Argument from Psychology, 479-480

4. Argument from Physiology, 480-483

III. Essential Elements of Human Nature, 483-488

1. The Dichotomous Theory, 483-484

2. The Trichotomous Theory, 484-488

IV. Origin of the Soul, 488-497

1. The Theory of Preexistence, 488-491

2. The Creatian Theory, 491-493

3. The Traducian Theory, 493-497

V. The Moral Nature of Man, 497-513

1. Conscience, 498-504

2. Will, 504-513

Chapter II. The Original State of Man, 514-532

I. Essentials of Man's Original State, 514-523

1. Natural Likeness to God, or Personality, 515-516

2. Moral Likeness to God, or Holiness, 516-523

A. The Image of God as including only Personality, 518-520

B. The Image of God as consisting simply in Man's Natural

Capacity for Religion, 520-3

II. Incidents of Man's Original State, 523-532

1. Results of Man's Possession of the Divine Image, 523-525

2. Concomitants of Man's Possession of the Divine Image, 525-

527

1st. The Theory of an Original Condition of Savagery, 527-531

2nd. The Theory of Comte as to the Stages of Human Progress,

531-532

Chapter III. Sin, or Man's State of Apostasy 533-664

Section I. The Law of God, 583-549

I. Law in General, 532-536

II. The Law of God in Particular, 536-547

1. Elemental Law, 536-544

A Systematic Theology for the 21st Century

2. Positive Enactment, 544-547

III. Relation of the Law to the Grace of God, 547-549

Section II. Nature of Sin, 549-573

I. Definition of Sin, 549-559

1. Proof, 552-557

2. Inferences, 557-559

II. The Essential Principle of Sin, 559-573

1. Sin as Sensuousness, 559-563

2. Sin as Finiteness, 563-566

3. Sin as Selfishness, 566-573

Section III.. Universality of Sin, 573-582

I. Every human being who has arrived at moral consciousness has committed acts, or cherished dispositions, contrary to the Divine Law, 573-577

II. Every member of the human race, without exception, possesses a corrupted nature, which is a source of actual sin, and is itself sin, 577-582

Section IV. Origin of Sin in the Personal Act of Adam, 582-593

I. The Scriptural Account in Genesis, 582-585

1. Its General Character not Mythical or Allegorical, but Historical, 582-583

2. The Course of the Temptation, and the resulting Fall, 584-585

II. Difficulties connected with the Fall, considered as the personal Act of Adam, 585-590

1. How could a holy being fall ? 585-588

2. How could God justly permit Satanic Temptation ? 588-589

3. How could a Penalty so great be justly connected with Disobedience to so slight a Command ? . . . 589-590

III. Consequences of the Fall so far as respects Adam, . . . 590-593

1. Death, 590-592

A. Physical Death or the Separation of the Soul from the Body, 590-591

B. Spiritual Death, or the Separation of the Soul from God, 591-592

2. Positive and formal Exclusion from God's Presence, 592-593

Section V. Imputation of Adam's Sin to his Posterity, . . . 593-637

Scripture Teaching as to Face-sin and Face-responsibility, . . . 593-597

I. Theories of Imputation, 597-628

1. The Pelagian Theory, or Theory of Man's Natural Innocence, 597-601

Part 06 Anthropology

- 2. The Arminian Theory, or Theory of voluntarily appropriated Depravity, 601-606
- 3. The New-School Theory, or Theory of uncondemnable Vitiosity, 606-612
- 4. The Federal Theory, or Theory of Condemnation by Covenant, 612-616
- 5. Theory of Mediate Imputation, or Theory of Condemnation for Depravity, 616-619
- 6. Augustinian Theory, or Theory of Adam's Natural Headship, 619-627
 - Exposition of Bom. 5 : 12-19, 625-627
 - Tabular View of the various Theories of Imputation, 628
 - II. Objections to the Augustinian Theory of Imputation, . 629-637
- Section VI. Consequences of Sin to Adam's Posterity, . . 637-660
 - I. Depravity, 637-644
 - 1. Depravity Partial or Total ?. 637-640
 - 2. Ability or Inability? 640-644
 - II. Guilt, 644-652
 - 1. Nature of Guilt, 644-647
 - 2. Degrees of Guilt, 648-652
 - III. Penalty, 652-660
 - 1. Idea of Penalty, 652-656
 - 2. Actual Penalty of Sin, 656-660
- Section VII. The Salvation of Infants, 660-664

Chapter 7 Anthropology Conclusion

In a Biblical systematic theology work anthropology is not “the social science that studies the origins and social relationships of human beings”⁵⁰ but it is a study of all that God reveals about man in his inerrant, infallible, verbally inspired Holy Bible. That differentiates this anthropology from previous systematic theologies. Believing that God says what he means and means what he says allows the straight forward examination man's origin, his existence in his state of integrity, in his state of sin and in his state of grace.

The other considerations in this anthropology involve untangling previous misconceptions that have been interwoven

50 WordWeb 8, Princeton University, 2006, s.v. “anthropology”.

into theology and doctrine books. The Bible depicts seven dispensations where-in man is tested and found wanting in his stewardship. This teaching is despised and rejected by Roman, Orthodox, and Protestant teachers who hold to some form of a covenant theology instead of the Bible's depiction of these dispensations. The Bible student readily finds many covenants that God makes with man, and dismisses a covenant theologians supposition that there is a single covenant wherein the catholic church circumvents God's covenant with Abraham, Israel and David.

Further, the Bible depicts man's depravity but falls short of the "Total Depravity" held to by Presbyterians and other followers of John Calvin. Their total depravity concept also stems from the covenant theologians supposition that a catholic church becomes the new "elect of God" and replaces God's chosen people Israel. In a Biblical examination the depravity of man addresses only the natural condition of unregenerate man in regards to his moral perversion or his impairment of virtue and moral principles.

A Biblical anthropology must first accept God's Word as its source of truth, and that Word details the creation of man in God's six day creation account. There need not be a great study to undermine the atheistic supposition of evolution in a Biblical anthropology, nor a compromised idea of a gap, nor an extravagant idea about half-breed angles, all one needs is the faith to know that God says what he means and means what he says. The Bible doctrine of man is thus, relatively straight forward.

Bibliography for Anthropology

The Holy Bible.

Bancroft, Emery H., *Elemental Theology*, 1932, Baptist Bible Seminary, 1945, 1960, Zondervan 1977, [In 1932 Emery H. Bancroft became the first Dean of Baptist Bible Seminary, Johnson City, NY and published his text for his course *Elemental Theology*. In 1968 the Seminary relocated to Clark Summit PA. In 1970 this author attended Practical Bible Training School on the Johnson City campus and studied Bancroft's text. In 1999 – 2000 this author attended Baptist Bible Seminary to take Greek (NT502 and NT503) via a 3 hour commute from Hammondsport NY to Clark Summit PA, and was reintroduced to Bancroft's exceptional work.]

Cambron, Mark G. *Bible Doctrines*. Grand Rapids, Michigan, Zondervan Publishing House, 1954, [Independent Baptist, Professor, Tennessee Temple Bible School, 1954].

Cambron Institute, The, 35890 Maplegrove Road, Willoughby, Oh 44094

Chafer, Lewis Sperry. *Systematic Theology*. Dallas Seminary Press, 1948.[Lewis Sperry Chafer was an American theologian. He founded and served as the first president of Dallas Theological Seminary, and was an influential founding member of modern Christian Dispensationalism. Born: February 27, 1871, Rock Creek, Died: August 22, 1952, Seattle, Education: Oberlin College, Wheaton College. For my Doctorate of Philosophy in Theological Studies through LBTS, I was tasked to analyze all six volumes of his *Systematic Theology*]

Geisler, Norman L, *Systematic Theology in One Volume*, Bethany

House, 2002, 3, 4, 5, 11 [Geisler, also a neoevangelical, sharply contrasts with Lewis Sperry Chafer in that Geisler 1) admits what he is, neoevangelical, 2) admits what he is attempting, a compilation of evangelical theologies, 3) shows superb organization and structure of thought, 4) contains depth, and 5) is a masterful communicator. This author cannot endorse all that Geisler believes to be true, but can endorse that he seems to capture all that has been believed by conservative evangelicals.]

Hodge, Charles, *Systematic Theology: Volume I-IV*, Charles Scribner & Company, 1871, Hardback- Grand Rapids, Mich., Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1940, Christian Classics Ethereal Library, <http://www.ccel.org>, public domain. [The Internet Archive www.archive.org/details/systematictheolo01hodg], [Charles Hodge, 1797-1878, Presbyterian Minister, Princeton Theologian].

Rice, Edward G., "ADVANCED SYSTEMATIC THEOLOGY II TH802 WRITTEN REPORT- A Written Report Presented to the Faculty of Louisiana Baptist University, In Partial Fulfillment of the Requirements for Doctorate of Philosophy in Theological Studies," Dec 2013.

Strong, Augustus H., *Systematic Theology: Three Volumes in 1*, Philadelphia, Valley Forge PA, The Judson Press, 1907, 35th printing 1993. [Augustus H. Strong, 1836-1921, American Baptist Pastor & Theologian].

Webster, Noah "1828 Dictionary of American English."

Part 07 Hamartiology

A Systematic Theology for the 21st Century

Part 07 Hamartiology

Download pdf at www.GSBaptistChurch.com/theology

By Dr. Edward G. Rice,
Pastor Good Samaritan Baptist Church
54 Main St. Box 99, Dresden NY 14441
www.GSBaptistChurch.com

As it is written, There is none righteous, no, not one: There is none that understandeth, there is none that seeketh after God. They are all gone out of the way, they are together become unprofitable; there is none that doeth good, no, not one. Their throat is an open sepulchre; with their tongues they have used deceit; the poison of asps is under their lips: Whose mouth is full of cursing and bitterness: Their feet are swift to shed blood: Destruction and misery are in their ways: And the way of peace have they not known: There is no fear of God before their eyes.... For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God;
Rom 3:10-18, 23

All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way; and the LORD hath laid on him the iniquity of us all.
Isaiah 53:6

What shall we say then? Is the law sin? God forbid. Nay, I had not known sin, but by the law: for I had not known lust, except the law had said, Thou shalt not covet. But sin, taking occasion by the commandment, wrought in me all manner of concupiscence. For without the law sin was dead. For I was alive without the law once: but when the commandment came, sin revived, and I died. And the

commandment, which was ordained to life, I found to be unto death. For sin, taking occasion by the commandment, deceived me, and by it slew me. Romans 7:7-11

The doctrine of sin is a necessary study in a systematic theology for a thoroughness in understanding man's dilemma and the miracle of God's remedy. Such a study could begin with a basic Bible doctrine as found in Bancroft's: *Elemental Theology* – Chapter 6 The Doctrine of Sin (Hamartiology)⁵¹ but all that he covered was the meaning, fact, and extent of sin. Dr. Cambron expanded this doctrine coverage to cover the origin, reality, nature, extent, realm, and penalty of sin. That thoroughness will establish the basis for this doctrine.

There is no truer, or more thorough, published, Baptist, and Biblical doctrine than that of Dr. Mark G. Cambron.⁵² His teachings on Bible Doctrine at Tennessee Temple Bible School thoroughly lay the foundation for this present work of systematic theology. His book, *Bible Doctrines*⁵³ will, with the permission of the Cambron Institute⁵⁴, be given in block quotes throughout this effort. The book is readily available through <http://www.thecambroninstitute.org>, and it forms the foundation for this systematic theology.⁵⁵

Believing in the verbal inspiration of the Holy Scriptures and believing that every single word is directly chosen by God, it is prudent

51 Emery H. Bancroft, *Elemental Theology*, 1932, Baptist Bible Seminary, 1945, 60, Zondervan 1977, 231-244

52 Dr. Mark G. Cambron, B.A., M.A., Th.B., Th.M., Th.D., D.D., L.L.D., Litt.D., was one of the foremost theologians of our times. Born in Fayetteville, Tennessee on July 31, 1911. He was born-again in 1919. It was during a Billy Sunday campaign in Chattanooga that he trusted in the Lord Jesus Christ as his personal Savior. He served for many years at Tennessee Temple College (1948-59) with Dr. Lee Roberson and served as Dean of the College. From <http://www.thecambroninstitute.org> accessed 10/16/2013

53 Mark G. Cambron, *Bible Doctrines*, 1954, Grand Rapids, Michigan, Zondervan Publishing House, 60-69

54 The Cambron Institute, 35890 Maplegrove Road, Willoughby, Oh 44094

55 It is noted and reproved in the Bibliology section of this work that Dr. Cambron's *Bible Doctrines* book does recommend using the R.V., instead of the Holy Bible, 41 times for 54 Bible verses. This work trusts only the King James Bible for English accuracy and acknowledgment of the inerrant, infallible, verbally inspired Holy Scriptures.

here to preserve and defend the doctrines extracted from Scripture and presented by Dr. Cambron. Below, in a block quote of his book, is his extensive analysis of Anthropology: [block quote of Dr. Cambron's *Bible Doctrines* page 136-145 (Zondervan 175-184)]

Cambron's Chapter V Hamartiology -The Doctrine of Sin

Chapter 5

Hamartiology - The Doctrine of Sin

p135

HAMARTIOLOGY (The Doctrine of Sin)

p136

OUTLINE FOR CHAPTER V

p137

HAMARTIOLOGY

I. The Origin of Sin.

- A. The Entrance of Sin into the Universe.
- B. The Introduction of Sin into the Human Race.

II. The Reality of Sin.

- A. Scripture Declares the Fact of Sin.
- B. Nature Proclaims the Fact of Sin.
- C. Law Discovers the Fact of Sin.
- D. Experience Proves the Fact of Sin.
- E. Man Confesses the Fact of Sin.

III. The Nature of Sin.

- A. The Modern View of Sin.
- B. The Biblical View of Sin.
- C. The Scriptural Statement of Sin.
- D. The Theological Definitions of Sin.
- E. The Summary of Scripture Concerning Sin.

IV. The Extent of Sin.

- A. As to the Heavens.
- B. As to the Earth.

V. The Realm of Sin.

- A. As an Act.

B. As a State.

C. As a Nature.

VI. The Penalty of Sin.

A. The Natural Penalty.

B. The Positive Penalty.

p138

Chapter V HAMARTIOLOGY Hamartiology is derived from the Greek word, *hamartia*, meaning “sin.” Thus, hamartiology is the doctrine of sin.

I. The Origin of Sin

A. The Entrance of Sin into the Universe.

Turning to Ezekiel 28:11-19 we see that it was Lucifer who brought sin into the universe: “Thine heart was lifted up because of thy beauty, thou hast corrupted thy wisdom by reason of thy brightness: I will cast thee to the ground, I will lay thee before kings, that they may behold thee” (v. 17). There was no sin before Lucifer sinned and became the Devil — Satan. His sin, the first in the universe, was when he chose his will over God’s will, desiring to be equal with God. Why did God allow sin to enter into the universe? This is one question God has not answered as yet.

B. The Introduction of Sin into the Human Race.

As there is sin in the human race, there must have been a beginning of sin. If there is no beginning of sin, man was *created* in sin. Thus, God is the creator of sin; but He is not. Sin came into the human race through deception and disobedience, motivated by unbelief. “Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived was in the transgression” (I Tim. 2:14). Why did God allow man to sin? The only possible answer we can give is Ephesians 2:7: “That in the ages to come he might shew the exceeding riches of his grace in his kindness toward us through Christ Jesus.”

II. The Reality of Sin

A. Scripture Declares the Fact of Sin.

“All have sinned, and come short of the glory of God” (Rom. 3:23). “The Scripture hath concluded all under sin, that the promise by

faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe” (Gal. 3:22).

B. Nature Proclaims the Fact of Sin.

“We know that the whole creation groaneth and travaileth in pain together unto now” (Rom. 8:22).

p139

C. Law Discovers the Fact of Sin.

“By the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified in his sight: for by the law is the knowledge of sin” (Rom. 3:20). The Apostle Paul thought that he was free from sin until he looked into the mirror of God’s law: “Nay, I had not known sin, but by the law: for I had not known lust, except the law had said, Thou shalt not covet” (Rom. 7:7b).

D. Experience Proves the Fact of Sin.

The experiences of Moses, David, Peter and John reveal the facts of sin. Even your own experience substantiates it.

E. Man Confesses the Fact of Sin.

1. *Saints Have Owned Up to It.* It was Job who said, “I am vile, and I abhor myself.” Isaiah declared, “Woe is me, for I am undone.” Daniel, of whom no breath of sin is mentioned, said, “My comeliness was turned into corruption.” Jeremiah confessed, “I am black.” Peter cried, “Depart from me, I am a sinful man.” Paul stated, “Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners; of whom I am chief.” Luther revealed, “I am afraid more of my heart than the Pope and all the Cardinals.” Moody said, “The man I have the most trouble with is the man who walks under my hat.”

2. *Sinners have Owned Up to It.* The Scriptures abound with the confession of the sinner and his sin: Pharaoh declared, “I have sinned this time” (Ex. 9:27b). Achan answered, “Indeed I have sinned” (Josh. 7:20b). Balaam admitted, “I have sinned,” (Num. 22:34b). Even Judas, who betrayed the Lord, said, “I have sinned” (Matt. 27:4).

III. The Nature of Sin

A. The Modern View of Sin.

1. *Society Calls It Indiscretion.*
2. *Scholars Label It Ignorance.*
3. *Evolutionists Say it is the Trait of the Beast.*
4. *Christian Scientists Teach It Is the Absence From Good.*
5. *The Fleshly Man Excuses It As Amiable Weakness.*

6. *The New Theologians Declare It Is Merely Selfishness.*

p140

B. The Biblical View of Sin.

1. *Sin Is Missing the Mark.* “All have sinned, and come short of the glory of God” (Rom. 3:23). See also Romans 5:12. Sin means “to miss the divine aim of God.”

2. *Sin Is Transgression.* “Whosoever committeth sin transgresseth also the law: for sin is the transgression of the law” (I John 3:4). Transgression of the law may be deliberate or unintentional. Either is sin. There was *sin* before the law, but there was no transgression. See Numbers 4:15; Joshua 7:11, 15; Isaiah 24:5; Daniel 9:11; Hosea 6:7; 8:1.

3. *Sin Is Bending of That Which Is Right.* “Righteous” means straight. Sin is the bending of that which was once straight. “David spake unto the LORD when he saw the angel that smote the people, and said, Lo, I have sinned, and have done wickedly: but these sheep, what have they done? let thine hand, I pray thee, be against me, and against my father’s house” (II Sam. 24:17). See also Romans 1:18; 6:13; II Thessalonians 2:12; II Peter 2:15; I John 5:17.

4. *Sin Is Rebellion Against God.* “Hear, O heavens, and give ear, O earth: for the LORD hath spoken, I have nourished and brought up children and they have rebelled against me” (Is. 1:2). See also II Thessalonians 2:4, 8.

5. *Sin Is a Debt.* “Forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors” (Matt. 6:12). See also Luke 11:4. The words “duty” (Luke 17:10), “ought” (John 13:14) and “bound” (II Thess. 2:13) are all from the same Greek word denoting debt.

6. *Sin Is Disobedience.* Sin is a lack of response to God. “In time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience” (Eph. 2:2). See also Ephesians 5:6; John 3:36, R.V.⁵⁶

7. *Sin Is a Deviation From God’s Requirement.* This means a fall;

56 There is no reason to trust ecumenical translators of 1881 A.D. to give a more representative translation of John 3:36 than what was given by fifty-seven exceptional linguists who took seven years to translate the entire Holy Bible and finished their crowning achievement in 1611 A.D.. Shame on Dr. Cambron for even bringing them up.

every offense against God is a fall. Sin is always a fall that hurts. “If ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you” (Matt. 6:14). See also Galatians 6:1; Romans 5:15-20.

8. *Sin Is Unbelief*. “He that believeth on the Son of God hath the witness in himself: he that believeth not God hath made him a liar; because he believeth not the record that God gave of his Son” (I John 5:10).

9. *Sin Is Impiety, or Ungodliness*. “To him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousness” (Rom. 4:5). “When we were yet without strength, in due time Christ died for the ungodly” (Rom. 5:6). See also I Timothy 1:9; I Peter 4:18; II Peter 2:5, 7; Jude 4, 15.

10. *Sin Is Iniquity*. By this we mean a wrong doing to the moral order of the universe.

p141

“Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these; Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies, envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that they that do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God” (Gal. 5:19-21). See also Colossians 3:5-9; Mark 7:19, 20.

C. The Scriptural Statement of Sin.

“All unrighteousness is sin: and there is a sin not unto death” (I John 5:17). See also I John 3:4; Proverbs 14:21; 21:4; 24:9; Romans 3:23; 6:23; I Samuel 15:23; Jeremiah 3:25; 14:7; James 2:9; 4:17; Romans 14:23.

D. The Theological Definitions of Sin.

1. *Sin is the transgression of, or lack of conforming to the law of God.*

2. *Sin is deficiency of love to God and man.*

3. *Sin is preference of self to God.*

4. *Sin is insubordination.*

5. *Sin is lack of conformity with God or His moral law in act, disposition, or state.*

6. *Sin is that which ought not to be.*

E. The Summary of Scripture Concerning Sin.

1. *Toward God.*

a. *Rebellion.* “Rebellion is as the sin of witchcraft, and stubbornness is as iniquity and idolatry” (I Sam. 15:23a).

b. *Failure to Love God Supremely.* “Thou shalt love the LORD thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy might” (Deut. 6:5).

2. *Toward the Divine Law.*

a. *Willful Transgression.* “The soul that doeth ought presumptuously, whether he be born in the land, or a stranger, the same reproacheth the LORD; and that soul shall be cut off from among his people” (Num. 15:30).

b. *Violation Through Ignorance.* “If any soul sin through ignorance, then he shall bring a she goat of the first year for a sin offering” (Num. 15:27). See also Hebrews 9:7.

3. *Toward Man.*

a. *Injustice.* “Thou shalt not defraud thy neighbor, neither rob: the wages of him that is hired shall not abide with thee all night until the morning” (Lev. 19:13).

b. *Failure to Love Him as One’s Self.* “Thou shalt not avenge, nor bear any grudge

p142

against the children of thy people, but thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself: I am the LORD” (Lev. 19:18).

4. *Toward Self.*

a. *Selfishness.* “What is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?” (Matt. 16:26).

b. *Corruption.* “Behold, I was shapen in iniquity; and in sin did my mother conceive me” (Ps. 51:5).

IV. The Extent of Sin

A. As to the Heavens.

The Scriptures reveal the fact that both sin and salvation began in heaven and came to earth. Sin began in heaven with the fall of Satan (Ezek. 28). Salvation is completed in heaven with the mediatorial work of Christ (Heb. 9:24).

B. As to the Earth.

1. *The Vegetable Kingdom.* “Unto Adam he said, because thou hast hearkened unto the voice of thy wife, and hast eaten of the tree, of which I commanded thee, saying. Thou shalt not eat of it: cursed is the ground for thy sake; in sorrow shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life; thorns also and thistles shall it bring forth to thee; and thou shalt eat the herb of the field” (Gen. 3:17, 18). Isaiah 53:13 reveals the blessed fact that the curse shall be taken off of the vegetable kingdom when Christ comes: “Instead of the thorn, shall come up the fir tree, and instead of the briar shall come up the myrtle tree: and it shall be to the LORD for a name, for an everlasting sign that shall not be cut off.”

2. *The Animal Kingdom.* Before the fall of man there were no man-eating animals. Isaiah 11:6-9 tells us that this curse also shall be removed at Christ’s second coming: “The wolf also shall dwell with the lamb, and the leopard shall lie down with the kid; and the calf and the young lion and the fatling together; and a little child shall lead them. And the cow and the bear shall feed; their young ones shall lie down together: and the lion shall eat straw like the ox. And the sucking child shall play on the hole of the asp, and the weaned child shall put his hand on the cockatrice’ den. They shall not hurt nor destroy in all my holy mountain: for the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the LORD as the waters cover the sea.”

3. *The Race of Mankind.*

a. *The Universality of Sin.* All men are sinners: “All have sinned and come short of the glory of God” (Rom. 3:23).

b. *The Totality of Sin.* All of man is sinful — his body, soul and spirit. “They are all gone out of the way, they are together become unprofitable: there is none that doeth good, no, not one. . . . there is no fear of God before their eyes. Now we know that what things soever the law saith, it saith to them that are under the law: that every mouth may be stopped, and all the world may become guilty before God” (Rom. 3:12, 18, 19.)

p143

V. *The Realm of Sin*

A. *As An Act.*

Man commits sins by his conduct.

B. *A State.*

Man is void of righteousness.

C. As a Nature.

Man is conceived in sin, born in sin, and is, therefore, a sinner by nature.

VI. The Penalty of Sin

A. The Natural Penalty.

This can best be illustrated by the example of a child who was forbidden to eat of a certain food. He disobeyed and ate too much, with the result that he became sick. The *natural consequence* of his disobedience was his illness. The *natural penalty of sin* is disease, disappointment and physical death.

B. The Positive Penalty.

To continue with the above example, we find that the *natural* penalty was the child's becoming sick. The positive penalty is the spanking he received from his father. The positive penalty of sin is described by the following:

1. *Death*. "The wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord" (Rom. 6:23). Death, in Scripture, never means "annihilation" or "complete destruction." There is no place in the Word where the word "annihilation" can be substituted for "death."

a. *Spiritual Death*. "She that liveth in pleasure is dead while she liveth" (I Tim. 5:6).

b. *Eternal Death*. "Death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death" (Rev. 20:14). "The Lord Jesus shall be revealed . . . in the flaming fire taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ: who shall be punished with everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power" (II Thess. 1:7, 8, 9). See also Revelation 20:12; 21:8. There was no death before sin came into man's life. Man was created to dwell with God forever. Death is said to have "passed upon all men" (Rom. 5:12). The word "passed" is translated "pierced through" in Luke 2:35; "go through" in Matthew 19:24; and "passed through" in I Corinthians 10:1.

p144

2. *Lost*. "While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy

name: those that thou gavest me I have kept, and none of them is *lost*, but the son of perdition; that the scripture might be fulfilled” (John 17:12). The word “lost” is the same as the words “perish” (John 3:16) and “destroy” (Matt. 10:28).

3. *Condemned*. “He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already; because he hath not believed on the name of the only begotten Son of God” (John 3:18). The word “condemnation” is a legal term, and indicates judicial decision. This same word, “condemnation,” is “damnation” in John 5:29, and “judgment” in Matthew 11:22, 24; II Peter 2:4, 9; 3:7; I John 4:17; Jude 6.

4. *Guilt*. “Now we know that what things soever the law saith, it saith to them who are under the law: that every mouth may be stopped, and all the world may become guilty before God” (Rom. 3:19).

5. *Perdition*. “Let your conversation be as it becometh the gospel of Christ: that . . . I may hear . . . that ye stand fast in one spirit. . . in nothing terrified by your adversaries: which is to them an evident token of *perdition*, but to you of salvation, and that of God” (Phil. 1:27, 28). See also John 17:12; II Thessalonians 2:3; Hebrews 10:39; II Peter 3:7; Revelation 17:8, 11. This same word “perdition” is translated “destruction” in Matthew 7:13: “Enter ye in at the strait gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat.” See also Romans 9:22; Philippians 3:19; II Peter 3:16. (In the New Testament the word “destruction” means “ruin”.) In Matthew 26:8 it is translated “waste”: “When his disciples saw it, they had indignation, saying, To what purpose is this *waste*?” The word “perish” in Matthew 9:17 is the same word as “perdition”: “Neither do men put new wine into old bottles: else the bottles break, and the wine runneth out, and the bottles *perish*: but they put new wine into new bottles, and both are preserved.”

6. *Punishment*. “These shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternal” (Matt. 25:46). There is a difference between the above Scripture and Hebrews 12:6: “Whom the Lord loveth he chasteneth, and scourgeth every son whom he receiveth.” Punishment is for the sinner; chastisement for the saint.

7. *Eternal* — *Everlasting*. “These shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternal” (Matt. 25:46). See also

Jude 6; II Thessalonians 1:9; Revelation 20:10; 14:11.

Some say that the words “everlasting” and “eternal” mean “a long life, an age, age lasting.” In other words, they say that guilty sinners will endure the fires of hell only for an age; after being purified, they shall enjoy eternal bliss with the rest of the saints of God. But this we add, “If hell and punishment are not forever, then there is no such thing as eternal life, nor eternal salvation.” The same word “eternal,” or “everlasting,” is used of God, “How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the *eternal* Spirit offered himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God?” (Heb. 9:14). “The revelation of the mystery... now is made manifest, and by the scriptures of the prophets, according to the commandment of the *everlasting* God, made known to all nations for the obedience of faith” (Rom. 16:26). If the punishment in hell for the damned is not eternal, then salvation is not eternal, and *God is not eternal! But He is!* So is salvation eternal; so is punishment.

p145

Critique of Dr. Chafer's Hamartiology Chapters XVII – XXIV (224 – 373)

Shall one suppose that a fundamentalist reading the doctrine of sin (Hamartiology) as written by a neoevangelical will learn something when the “*neo*” is camped right close to the edge of apostasy? I trow not. Again two major camps came out of the turn of the last century; the fundamentalist is very much personified in C. I. Scofield, and the neoevangelical is very much personified in Lewis Sperry Chafer.

The fundamentalist wanted to bar the gate and close the door on the apostasy found in the modernist, liberal leaning Church; they were militant. The neoevangelical thought that a reasonable inclusiveness could sway those modernist leanings and reform the apostate beliefs; they were non militant.

Understanding the neo-evangelical stance that Dr. Chafer is coming from, and a conviction that his methods for developing a systematic theology has fatal flaws, warns that his approach to hamartiology may be novel, but it is still flawed.

Dr. Chafer's thorough outline is listed below:

Part 07 Hamartiology

Hamartiology by Chafer (149 pages)⁵⁷
Introduction to Hamartiology ch 17 pg 224
Personal Sin and Its Remedy ch 18 pg 235
The Transmitted Sin Nature And Its Remedy ch 19 pg 283
Imputed Sin and Its Remedy ch 20 pg 296
Man's Estate "Under Sin" and His Relation to Satan ch 21 pg 316
The Christians Sin and Its Remedy ch 22 pg 325
Punishment ch 23 pg 360
The Final Triumph Over All Sin ch 24 pg 365-373

Such a unique approach to the doctrine of sin might be expected from one who early in his life wrote an eloquent thesis on Satan and his dominion⁵⁸ Dr. Chafer saw a failure of previous systematic theologies to properly capture the whole realm of the doctrine of sin, just as they failed to capture dispensationalism. He has thus far failed to take a stand on dispensationalism, but herein attempts the remedy of the Charles Hodge and Augustus Strong's condensed hamartiology.

Unfortunately Dr. Chafer still uses a flawed inclusive, hypothesis based methodology, and a verbose passive communication mannerism. His flawed method is so animated and his verbose manner so annoying, (for one who enjoys getting to the main point, highly annoying) that Chafer's novel outline need not be thoroughly examined when a good Bible doctrine book, like Dr. Cambron's is so readily available. Chafer's work is more of a verbose philosophy book. Both Cambron and Bancroft expand and improve Chafer's coverage for hamartiology, because they do so with Scriptures as their sole source.

The scientific method is such a wrong method for developing a theology, and Chafer so brazenly uses it in this section, that some of this method's malefactors should be herein pointed out. Chafer begins his analysis of personal sin by first collecting multiple opinions of philosophers and by-gone Christian theologians. He specifically quotes Mani, a third century philosopher, before he quotes Matthew, Mark, Luke, or John, first century purveyors of absolute truth. Chafer spends pages developing this philosophical understanding of dualism, extensively quoting Dr. Miller who discusses the "inner variance of evil."⁵⁹ Really?

57 Chafer, *Systematic Theology Vol 2*, 234.

58 Chafer, *Satan*, 1909.

59 Chafer, *Systematic Theology*, 240.

Dr. Chafer then, wishing to capture “another truth which must not be overlooked,” extensively quotes “*The International Standard Bible Encyclopedia*.” After fourteen pages of development, he finally does bring a few Scriptures to bear on his subject. Now after gathering together a whole room full of witnesses about the sinfulness of sin, one witness, the Holy Bible, is left to stand in a back corner, as it were. Chafer finally draws the cord to secure the hypothesis. In Section III, pg 252, he presents his “proof” in Section IV, pg 254, he talks of advancing it to a theory and in Section V, pg 267, he gives general terms and classifies his hypothesis as law, i.e. the truth. Chafer is using the scientific method to develop truth. It is blatant. It is brazen. It is error.

Theology is not a science. One cannot develop theological truth like Kepler developed the laws of planetary motion. There is an inerrant, infallible, plenary, verbally inspired sole source of theological truth. It needs to be the final authority, Chafer uses it as a last resort authority. The scientific method does not produce sound theology.

It is curious that theologians who want to use profound philosophies as their source of wisdom, do not use God's chosen philosophers. They will reference Socrates (469-399 B.C.), Plato (428-348 B.C.), Aristotle (384-322 B.C.), even Mani⁶⁰ (216-274 A.D.), but God included two exceptional philosophy books in the Holy Bible. In his 66 book communication, Job and Ecclesiastes are philosophical ventures. Philosophy is the pursuit of wisdom by purely intellectual means. This emphasis on logical reasoning rather than the empirical reasoning done in science is not more capable of deducing theological truth than is science. Both negate the inerrant, infallible, plenary, verbally inspired Word of God as the sole source of theological truth.

Indeed it is the exclusion of phenomenological observation (science) and rationalism (philosophy) which drives the theological student to require his sole source in the first place. Although philosophy will not achieve a theology, ones theology should not be void of logical reasoning. God's philosopher Job, spends forty two chapters philosophizing about man being justified before a Holy God. God's philosopher, Solomon, spends twelve chapters philosophizing about the vanity of man. Both are clearly philosophical books. Both are frustrated in finding truth, until God steps in; in Job with staunch

60 Ibid., 236.

rebuke, in Ecclesiastes with a plan for life. Such is the sole value of philosophy in developing theology. Man is totally reliant on God to lead us into truth. Jesus said it thus: “I am... the truth, no man cometh to the Fathers but by me” (John 14).

Chafer, using a scientific method and a verbose, passive communication mannerism is not a good source for documented hamartiology. If one is satisfied with a neoevangelical perspective Geisler's one volume is far superior to Chafer's six volumes. If one desire just the facts Cameron and Bancroft provide excellent coverage of the doctrine of sin. A systematic theology which does not rely on philosophy or science to secure a hamartiology is not presently available outside of this effort.

Part 08 Soteriology

A Systematic Theology for the 21st Century

Part 08 Soteriology

Download pdf at www.GSBaptistChurch.com/theology

By Dr. Edward G. Rice,
Pastor Good Samaritan Baptist Church
54 Main St. Box 99, Dresden NY 14441
www.GSBaptistChurch.com

Chapter 1 Soteriology Introduction

How shall we escape, if we neglect so great salvation; which at the first began to be spoken by the Lord, and was confirmed unto us by them that heard him; God also bearing them witness, both with signs and wonders, and with divers miracles, and gifts of the Holy Ghost, according to his own will? Heb 2:3-4

There is no greater theme extending from Genesis to Revelation, in the Holy Bible, than that of Soteriology. “*Soterio*” is the Greek word for “*Salvation*”, and “*ology*” is a most thorough consideration of, a most thorough analysis of, a most thorough communication about a topic. It has been stated and defended in the section on Christology that the person of the Lord Jesus Christ is the greatest theme of the Bible. This section will effectively merge the doctrine of Christ and the doctrine of salvation to stand by the previous and still justify our topic sentence. When one considers the salvation of man as the overspreading theme of the whole Bible, one finds every chapter, every verse and every line somehow interrelated to that theme. Such a task need not be daunting; it needs to be thorough, and it is a joyous revelation of God's grandest

purpose.

Salvation necessitates three ingredients, a lost estate, a helplessness of and a helplessness in restoring that estate, and a savior who can restore the estate. Holy Scripture employs such a salvation on or in three perspectives, the lost estate of corporate mankind, the lost estate of a nation, Israel, and the lost estate of the individual. Consequently, salvation must needs be explored in all three ingredients, in all three perspectives. Thirdly, one must consider that the last estate, that of the individual, is not always in relation to man's lost eternal soul. King David, for example, asked for the salvation of his integrity, the salvation of his peace of mind, and the salvation of his kingdom, et.al. An estate, thus, may be a condition, status, or rank. An estate may be one's fortune, one's prosperity, or one's possessions. The word *estate* is often used in relation to an interest or ownership in land or property. Our main focus for salvation will be on man's lost estate with God, but there are other lost estates that need a savior. It is marvelous that there may be many lost estates under consideration, but there is only one Saviour.

Chapter 2 Soteriology from a Bible Doctrine

There are many considerations to make a Systematic Theology's volume on Soteriology, the doctrine of So-Great-Salvation, a crucial element of a holistic systematic theology. As to So-Great-Salvation, there is no greater theme in the Holy Bible.

A Systematic Theology must first have as its foundation a true Bible Doctrine. From that foundation a discourse may systematically analyze the doctrine keeping it pure from its detractors, and evaluating its fit into the larger arena of theology. Detractors from truth are myriad from outside but fall under three major considerations when guarding against Christianities internal sabotage. The Roman Catholic religion has always directly opposed Bible truth; the Protestant Reformers are supposed to have come back to Bible truth, but, subtly, they carry all the Roman error as concealed weapons; and the ecumenical Bible correctors who make a pretense of using textual criticism and modern language to "fix" what they say God was unable to preserve. These three are enemies to Bible doctrine, Roman, directly; Reformed, more

subliminally; and Ecumenical Bible correctors, very shrewdly. Exposing their pernicious ways is not generally the focus of a Bible Doctrines book, and in a world where Bible doctrine is under constant attack, this type of systematic theology needs be developed. The solid Biblical doctrine that forms the basis for this systematic theology comes from Dr. Cambron.

There is no truer, or more thorough, published, Baptist, and Biblical doctrine than that of Dr. Mark G. Cambron.⁶¹ His teachings on Bible Doctrine at Tennessee Temple Bible School thoroughly lay the foundation for this present work of systematic theology. His book, *Bible Doctrines*⁶² will, with the permission of the Cambron Institute,⁶³ be given in block quotes throughout this effort. Cambron's book is readily available through <http://www.thecambroininstitute.org>, and it forms the foundational basis for this Systematic Theology.⁶⁴

Believing in the verbal inspiration of the Holy Scriptures and believing that every single word is directly chosen by God, is a necessary start for defending and defining the doctrines extracted from Holy Scripture; that is what is presented by Dr. Cambron. Below, in a block quote of his book, is his extensive analysis of Soteriology: [block quote of Dr. Cambron's *Bible Doctrines* page 147-169 (Zondervan 185-210)]

Cambron's Ch VI Soteriology - The Doctrine of Salvation

p147

SOTERIOLOGY (The Doctrine of Salvation)

p148

OUTLINE FOR CHAPTER VI SOTERIOLOGY

61 Dr. Mark G. Cambron, B.A., M.A., Th.B., Th.M., Th.D., D.D., L.L.D., Litt.D., was one of the foremost theologians of our times. Born in Fayetteville, Tennessee on July 31, 1911. He was born-again in 1919. It was during a Billy Sunday campaign in Chattanooga that he trusted in the Lord Jesus Christ as his personal Savior. He served for many years at Tennessee Temple College (1948-59) with Dr. Lee Roberson and served as Dean of the College. From <http://www.thecambroininstitute.org> accessed 10/16/2013

62 Mark G. Cambron, *Bible Doctrines*, 1954, Grand Rapids, Michigan, Zondervan Publishing House, 60-69

63 The Cambron Institute, 35890 Maple Grove Road, Willoughby, Oh 44094

64 It is noted and reproved in the Bibliology section of this work that Dr. Cambron's *Bible Doctrines* book recommends using the R.V., instead of the Holy Bible, 41 times for 54 Bible verses.

<p>I. Repentance. A. Citation. B. Explanation. C. Manifestation. D. Condition. E. Definition.</p> <p>II. Faith. Citation. Explanation. Donation. Centralization Production.</p> <p>III. Regeneration. A. Citation. B. Explanation. C. Compulsion. D. Condition.</p>	<p>IV. Justification. Citation. Explanation. Condition. Illustration. Manifestation.</p> <p>V. Sanctification. A. Citation. B. Explanation. C. Condition. D. Definition.</p> <p>VI. Adoption. A. Citation. B. Explanation. C. Origination. D. Consummation. E. Manifestation.</p>	<p>VII. Redemption. Citation. Explanation.</p> <p>VIII. Prayer. Affirmation. Delineation. Explanation. Stimulation. Illustration. Regulation. Condition. Limitation. Mediation.</p>
---	---	--

p150

Chapter VI SOTERIOLOGY Soteriology is the doctrine of salvation.

I. Repentance

A. Citation.

“In those days came John the Baptist, preaching in the wilderness of Judaea, and saying, Repent ye: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand” (Matt. 3:1, 2). “Jesus began to preach, and to say, Repent: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand” (Matt. 4: 17). Paul testified “both to the Jews, and also to the Greeks, repentance toward God, and faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ” (Acts 20:21). “As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten: be zealous therefore, and repent” (Rev. 3:19). See also Mark 6:12; Luke 24:47; Acts 2:38; 11:18; 26:20; II Peter 3:9.

To those who say that repentance is not to be preached today, and that it is not essential for salvation, we point out that repentance was preached by John the Baptist, the Lord Jesus Christ, and the Apostle Paul. Repentance was proclaimed *before* Pentecost, *at* Pentecost, and

after Pentecost. “Except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish” (Luke 13:5).

B. Explanation.

1. *It Is Not Reformation.* Repentance is wholly an inward act of the mind. To many people it means to turn away from their sins, but if that were so, this would be *reformation*. Repentance is not doing something, as an act, for no man is saved because he gives up something. A man can turn away from his sins and still not be a Christian.

2. *It Is Not Contrition.* By this we mean that repentance is not agony of the soul for sin. Many folk in jail are sorry. Are they sorry for their crime? No. They are sorry because they were caught. We believe, however, that in a genuine case of repentance, the sinner will be sorry for his sin. Just being sorry for sin is not repentance, but it can *lead* to repentance. “Godly sorrow worketh repentance to salvation not to be repented of: but the sorrow of the world worketh death” (II Cor. 7:10).

3. *It Is Not Penance.* Penance is an expression of sorrow (by some act) that is done to pay for sin; it is something like a punishment.

4. *It Is a Change of Mind.* The literal meaning of repentance is “after-thought” or “reconsideration.” By “change of mind” we do not mean a “change of opinion”; a

p151

“change of mind” is the substitution of a new mind for the old. It is new in character.

True repentance is a change of mind which will lead to a change of action, but let us be warned that it is possible to have a change of action without a change of mind. A good example of repentance is found in Mathew 21:28, 29:

“But what think ye? A certain man had two sons; and he came to the first, and said, Son, go work today in my vineyard. He answered and said, I will not: but afterward he repented, and went.”

Before anyone can be saved there must be repentance. There must be a change of mind about many things: sin, self, God and Jesus Christ. “The servant of the Lord” must instruct “in meekness . . . those that oppose themselves; if God peradventure will give repentance to the acknowledging of the truth” (II Tim. 2:25).

Making it a little stronger, repentance means not only a change of

mind; it is the taking of one's stand against himself and the placing of himself on the side of God. Thus, repentance is self-judgment.

C. Manifestation.

1. *Change in the Intellect.*
2. *Change of Feeling.*
3. *Change of Will.*
4. *Change of Action.*

D. Condition.

1. *Through the Goodness of God.* "Despise thou the riches of his goodness and forbearance and longsuffering; not knowing that the goodness of God leadeth thee to repentance?" (Rom. 2:4). See also II Peter 3:9.

2. *Through the Gospel of God.* "Now when they heard this, they were pricked in their hearts, and said unto Peter and to the rest of the apostles, Men and brethren, what shall we do? Then Peter said unto them, Repent and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for [because of] the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost. . . . Then they that gladly received his word were baptized: and the same day there were added unto them about three thousand souls" (Acts 2:37, 38, 41).

3. *Through the Scriptural Teaching.* "The servant of the Lord must not strive; but be gentle unto all men, apt to teach, patient, in meekness instructing those that oppose themselves; if God peradventure will give them repentance to the acknowledging of the truth" (II Tim. 2:24, 25).

4. *Through the Chastisements of God.* "Repent; or else I will come unto thee quickly

p152

and will fight against them with the sword of my mouth" (Rev. 2:16). See also Revelation 2:5; 3:3; Hebrews 12:6-11.

E. Definition.

Repentance is the work of God which results in a change of mind in respect to man's relationship to God. It is neither sorrow nor penance, though penitent sorrow may lead to a change of mind. *Repentance is always an element of saving faith.*

II. Faith

A. Citation.

"The gospel of Christ ... is the power of God unto salvation to

every one that believeth. . .

. For therein is the righteousness of God revealed from faith to faith: as it is written, the just shall live by faith” (Rom. 1:17). “We conclude that a man is justified by faith without the deeds of the law” (Rom. 3:28). See also Matthew 9:22; Acts 26:18; Romans 4:5; II Corinthians 5:7; Ephesians 2:8; Hebrews 11:6; James 5:15; I Peter 1:5.

B. Explanation.

A good definition of faith is: confidence in others; reliance upon testimony. True faith is composed of the following:

1. *Knowledge.* One must be informed before he can have faith. This is true in the things of man, as it is in Christ. It is impossible to have faith in Christ without the Word.

“Faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God” (Rom. 10:17). Sometimes we may ask for *more* faith, but this is out of order. To increase one’s faith, one has only to read more of the Word of God. Before a person can have faith, he must know it exists.

2. *Belief.* The second element of faith is belief. Everyone knows what belief means, that is, to accept it as the truth. People can know that there is a Saviour by the name of Jesus, and believe that He can save. Yet, this is not *saving faith*. To have faith in a chair, one must know that it exists, and believe that it can hold him up. Still this is not complete faith in the chair, until the third element is involved, and that is:

3. *Trust.* Trust is essential to faith in anything. It is most essential in saving faith. It is one thing to know that Christ died, and believe it; it is quite another thing to trust Him, the dying and resurrected Saviour, for salvation. Let us take the chair again for example: One can know that a chair exists, and believe that it can hold him up, but faith in that chair is not exercised until he sits in it. Are you completely *trusting* Christ for *your* salvation?

4. *Recumbency.* This means to wholly rely upon Christ. When one lies upon the bed, he fully relaxes upon it and rests. When we put our trust in Him, we should rely upon Him and rest.

p153

C. Donation.

1. *By God the Father.* “I say, through the grace given unto me, to every man that is among you, not to think of himself more highly than he ought to think; but to think soberly, according as God hath dealt to

every man the measure of faith” (Rom. 12:3).

2. *By God the Son.* Jesus is “the author and finisher of our faith; who for the joy that was set before him endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God” (Heb. 12:2).

3. *By God the Holy Spirit.* “To one is given by the Spirit the word of wisdom . . . to another faith by the same Spirit; to another the gifts of healing by the same Spirit” (I Cor.

12:8, 9).

D. Centralization.

The object of faith is Christ, and He alone.

E. Production.

The end of faith is salvation. “By grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: not of works, lest any man should boast” (Eph. 2:8, 9).

III. Regeneration

A. Citation.

“Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God. . . . Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God” (John 3:3, 5). We are “born again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, by the word of God, which liveth and abideth forever” (I Peter 1:23). “Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin; for his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God” (I John 3:9). See also I John 2:29; 5:4, 18.

B. Explanation.

1. *It Is Not Reformation.* Some people think that by turning over a new leaf one becomes a child of God. Some men quit drinking because of a bad heart, not because they know it is sin against God. One could cease from *all* sin; yet this is not regeneration.

2. *It Is Not Conversion.* Many times we speak of regeneration as conversion, but, in reality, “conversion” means to turn around. Saved people can be *converted* (turned around) even after they are saved, as was Peter. He was saved long before the Lord Jesus had declared: “Simon, Simon, behold, Satan hath desired to have you, that he may sift

p154

you as wheat: but I have prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not: and when thou art *converted* [turned around], strengthen thy brethren” (Luke 22:31, 32).

3. *It Is Not Confirmation.* Some churches, as they administer a certain ritual of the church, claim that the participants (usually children of twelve or thirteen years of age) receive the Holy Spirit with the anointing of oil. This is a false doctrine. One does not receive the Holy Spirit by any act of man, but upon receiving Christ as Saviour.

4. *It Is Not Water Baptism.* There is no saving faith in all the water of the world.

Someone may ask, then, “Why are we commanded to be baptized?” It is the answer of a good conscience toward God (I Peter 3:21b). It is an ordinance depicting the death, burial and resurrection of Christ, and nothing more.

5. *It Is Not Church Membership.* We are told in Hebrews 10:25 not to forsake “the assembling of ourselves together as the manner of some is.” However, this does not bring about change in a sinner’s heart. Remember, the word “church” means “a called-out company,” or “assembly.” Joining a human assembly cannot bring about salvation. Some people believe that the *Church* saves. Now translate this statement correctly: “The assembly saves.” Is there an assembly on earth which can give salvation? Is there a called-out company which can make a person a child of God? *No!* There is no assembly that we would trust with the saving of our soul.

6. *It Is Not the Taking of the Lord’s Supper.* There is no saving efficacy, or cleansing of sin, in partaking of the elements of the Lord’s Supper. The Lord’s Supper is taken only in remembrance of Christ and His work upon Calvary. We shall do this in remembrance of Him until He comes.

7. *It Is the New Birth.* “If any man is in Christ, there is a new creation: the old things are passed away; behold, they are become new” (II Cor. 5:17, R.V.⁶⁵). “If ye know that he is righteous, ye know that

65 An accurate Bible states this verse, “Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new.” The ecumenical translators who Dr. Cambrun unwittingly trusted here misrepresented both the “he” who is a new creature, and the “all things” that are become new.

every one that doeth righteousness is born of him” (I John 2:29).

C. Compulsion.

Ye *must* be born again. It is a necessity declared by the Lord Himself.

1. *As Seen in the Depravity of Man.* “That which is born of the flesh is flesh: and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit” (John 3:6). The words, “Ye must be born again,” are better translated, “Ye must be born from above.” Man must have a birth from above if he is to live some day in the heavens above.

2. *As Seen in the Universality of Man.* There is not a man anywhere but who has to be born again. “All have sinned, and come short of the glory of God” (Rom. 3:23).

3. *As Seen in the Holiness of God.* If one is to be received and made a child of God by a righteous and holy God, a great change must take place to make him holy. “It is written,

p155

Ye shall be holy; for I am holy” (I Peter 1:16, R.V.⁶⁶).

D. Condition.

1. *The Divine Work.* The process of becoming a child of God is not by natural generation. Man cannot regenerate himself. It is not a matter of the human will, but of God. “As many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name: which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God” (John 1:12, 13). Practically speaking, we had nothing to do with our first birth, and we can have nothing to do with the second birth.

2. *The Human Element.* While it is God who regenerates the believing sinner, yet there is one part that man plays; he must *believe!* “By grace are ye saved”; yes, but “through faith.” “No man cometh unto the Father but by me.” Yes, Jesus is the way, but the sinner must *come!* The sinner must *receive* Christ by his own faith. This is the human part. God does the rest.

Shame on him, and them.

66 The actual Bible states this verse, “Because it is written, Be ye holy; for I am holy.” The ecumenical translators completely misrepresented the verse, took it out of the imperative voice, and made it a mere present tense “shall.” Shame on Dr. Cambron for trusting them, and shame on them for twisting God’s Words.

IV. Justification

A. Citation.

We are “justified by his grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus” (Rom.

3:24). “The righteousness of Christ shall be imputed to us, if we believe on him that raised up Jesus our Lord from the dead; who was delivered for our offences, and was raised again for our justification” (Rom. 4:24,25). “Being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ” (Rom. 5:1). “Such [thieves, covetous, drunkards, and the like] were some of you: but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God” (I Cor. 6:11).

See also Romans 3:26; 5:9; Galatians 2:16, 17; Titus 3:7.

B. Explanation.

To justify is “to reckon, to declare, or to show righteous.” To justify does not mean to make righteous. God declares the believer to be righteous; He does not make him righteous. Justification is a legal term: a good standing.

In the human law courts, the law is over the judge. If the judge is an honest and just judge, he can show no mercy. He must declare the defendant guilty, or not guilty, according to the law. In God’s law court, the believer, a guilty man, is brought before the judgment bar of God and is declared not guilty. God is over His law.

In a human law court, a guilty person may be pardoned, the crime forgiven but not paid.

In God’s law court this is not so. All sins must be paid for, and the sinner punished. Three things are incorporated in God’s justification.

1. *Forgiveness.* “He, whom God raised again, saw no corruption. Be it known you, therefore, men and brethren, that through this man is preached unto you the forgiveness

p156

of sins: and by him all that believe are justified from all things, from which ye could not be justified by the law of Moses” (Acts 13:37-39).

A Christian is not a pardoned criminal; he is a righteous man. God declares him so. He is one who has paid for his sins by another, his substitute, the Lord Jesus Christ. God never pardons apart from Christ.

2. *Imputation*. “Blessed is the man unto whom the Lord imputeth not iniquity, and in whose spirit there is no guile” (Ps. 32:2). “Blessed is the man to whom the Lord will not impute sin” (Rom. 4:8). “Until the law sin was in the world: but sin is not imputed when there is no law” (Rom. 5:13).

Imputation means to “put something against.” Therefore, the righteousness of Christ is put to the sinner’s account. All of the believer’s sins were put to Christ’s account — He paid them in full. In turn, His righteousness was put to the believer’s account, and he stands there, declared to be righteous.

3. *Fellowship*. “One God and Father of all, who is above all, and through all, and in you all” (Eph. 4:6). This is the fellowship of God and the believer as Father and Son.

Remember, God is Father only of His children, not of unbelievers.

C. *Condition*.

1. *Negative*.

a. *Not By Works*. “Now to him that worketh is the reward not reckoned of grace, but of debt. But to him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousness” (Rom. 4:4, 5). See also Romans 11:6.

b. *Not By the Deeds of the Law*. “That no man is justified by the law in the sight of God, it is evident: for, The just shall live by faith” (Gal. 3:11). See also Romans 3:20; Galatians 2:16.

2. *Positive*.

a. *By God*. God set forth Christ Jesus “to declare... his righteousness: that he might be just, and the justifier of him which believeth in Jesus” (Rom. 3:26). See also Romans 8:33.

b. *By Grace*. “Being justified by his grace, we should be made heirs according to the hope of eternal life” (Titus 3:7). See also Romans 3:24.

c. *By Blood*. “Being now justified by his blood, we shall be saved from wrath through him” (Rom. 5:9). See also Romans 3:24, 25.

d. *By Faith*. “Being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ” (Rom. 5:1).

e. *By Resurrection*. Faith shall be imputed to us for righteousness “if we believe on him that raised up Jesus our Lord from the dead; who was delivered for our offences, and was raised again for our

justification” (Rom. 4:24, 25).

p157

D. Illustration.

1. *Abraham* (Rom. 4:1-5).

2. *David* (Rom. 4:6-8).

3. *Noah* (Heb. 11:7).

E. Manifestation.

1. *In Works.* “Was not Abraham our father justified by works, when he had offered Isaac his son upon the altar? Seest thou how faith wrought with his works, and by works was faith made perfect? And the scripture was fulfilled which saith, Abraham believed God, and it was imputed unto him for righteousness: and he was called the Friend of God” (Jas. 2:21-23). The evidence of salvation is gratitude, which is good works. Many times the good works are very, very weak, but God accepts the will that is behind them.

2. *In Experience.* “Being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ: by whom also we have access by faith into this grace wherein we stand, and rejoice in hope of the glory of God. And not only so, but we glory in tribulation also: knowing that tribulation worketh patience; and patience, experience; and experience, hope: and hope maketh not ashamed; because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost which is given unto us” (Rom. 5:1-5).

V. Sanctification

This is one phase of salvation which is very much confused today. The Bible student will be surprised at what God has to say about sanctification. Much is said about experience, and we believe in experience; but let us be cautious and let the Word of God interpret our experience, rather than our experience interpret the Word of God.

A. Citation.

“This is the will of God, even your sanctification, that ye should abstain from fornication.

. . . For God hath not called us unto uncleanness, but unto holiness” (I Thess. 4:3, 7).

“Unto the church of God which is at Corinth, to them that are sanctified in Christ Jesus, called to be saints, with all that in every place

call upon the name of Jesus Christ our Lord, both theirs and ours: Grace be unto you and peace” (I Cor. 1:2). “Both he that sanctifieth and they that are sanctified are all of one: for which cause he is not ashamed to call them brethren” (Heb. 2:11). “Follow peace with all men, and holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord” (Heb. 12:14). See also I Peter 1:2; John 17:17; Exodus 13:2; Jeremiah 2:3; Ephesians 1:1. The words “sanctification, holiness, and saints” all come from the same root.

p158

B. Explanation.

1. *It Is Not a Betterment of the Flesh.* Never does it say in Scripture that the work of the Holy Spirit is to improve the old nature. The natural man cannot understand the Holy Spirit. How could the natural man be improved by the Spirit? This is hard to say, but nevertheless, it is true, that the flesh of the believer is no better than the flesh of the sinner. The Scriptures say, “Mortify the deeds of the flesh.”

2. *It Is Not the Eradication of the Sinful Nature.* There are those who contend that a believer may have a purifying experience that will burn out all carnality, thus rendering him sinless, incapable of committing sin. We do not deny such an experience, but we caution the believer to prove his experience by the Word, rather than trying to prove the Word by his experience. Even though the Old Testament is written in the Hebrew, and the New Testament is written in the Greek, the words “sanctification,” “holy,” and “saint” all have the same root meaning.

To those who hold that sanctification is an experience by which the sinful nature is eradicated, let us turn to the Word and see how sanctification is used: “Thou shalt anoint the altar of the burnt-offering, and all his vessels, and sanctify the altar: and it shall be an altar most holy” (Ex. 40:10). Where is the eradication here? Did the altar have a sinful nature? Here is another example: “Moses said unto the LORD, The people cannot come up to Mount Sinai: for thou chargedst us, saying, Set bounds about the mount, and sanctify it” (Ex. 19:23). Did Mount Sinai have a sinful nature? “Let the priests also, which come near to the LORD, sanctify themselves, lest the LORD break forth upon them” (Ex. 19:22). How could priests eradicate their own sinful natures? “Say ye of him, whom the Father hath sanctified, and sent unto the world, Thou blasphemest; because I said, I am the Son of God” (John

10:36). Here Christ Himself is spoken of as being sanctified. There is no sinful nature here! “For their sakes I sanctify myself, that they also might be sanctified through the truth” (John 17:19). Does this mean eradication of the sinful nature? Of course not. “The unbelieving husband is sanctified by the wife, and the unbelieving wife is sanctified by the husband: else were your children unclean; but now are they holy” (I Cor. 7:14). Is it possible that believing wives can eradicate the sinful nature from their unbelieving husbands? If sanctification means eradication from the sinful nature, explain the following: “Sanctify the Lord God in your hearts: and be ready always to give an answer to every man that asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you with meekness and fear” (I Peter 3:15). Carnal Christians are sanctified; this does not speak of the eradication of the sinful nature (I Cor. 1:1, 2 with 3:1, 3).

3. *It Is Not Sanctimoniousness.* Sanctification is not an affected, or hypocritical devoutness; neither is it false saintliness. Sanctification is not marked by the wearing of a beard, or black stockings, and the like. You can tell whether saintliness is real or false.

4. *It Is Not a Second Blessing.* In II Corinthians 1:15 Paul speaks of wanting to give the Church a second benefit, not a second blessing. This epistle was written to people who were already sanctified (I Cor. 1:2 and 6:11).

p159

5. *It Is “To Be Set Apart.”* The root idea always means “to be set apart,” or “separation.” To sanctify always means to set apart for a purpose, whether in respect to saint or sinner. Unsaved men can separate, or sanctify themselves unto sin. “They that sanctify themselves, and purify themselves in the gardens behind the tree in the midst, eating swine’s flesh and the abomination, and the mouse, shall be consumed together, saith the LORD” (Is. 66:17). Jesus sanctified Himself; to say He made Himself sinless is blasphemous. The Sabbath was sanctified, and we know that the Sabbath had no sinful nature.

Again we emphasize that the words “holiness,” “sanctification,” and “saint” all come from the same word meaning “set apart,” “separation.” The word “sanctify” in Exodus 13:2, and the word “holiness” in Psalm 29:2, and the word “saints” of Psalm 34:9 are the same word. The word “sanctify” of John 17:17, and the word “saint” of

Philippians 1:1, and the word “holiness” of Hebrews 12:10 are all from the same word.

Sanctification, being set apart, is spoken of in three ways:

a. *Positional*. “Such were some of you: but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God” (I Cor. 6:11).

We are sanctified the very moment we believe. The above Scripture declares that we are sanctified before we are justified, thus ruling out the second and third works of grace.

“We are bound to give thanks alway to God for you, brethren beloved of the Lord, because God hath from the beginning chosen you to salvation through sanctification of the Spirit and belief of the truth” (II Thess. 2:13). Sanctification is first in order, absolutely. See also I Peter 1:2. God never allows us to work up to a position; He first places us in a position set apart to Him, and tells us to be true to that position. A saint truly is God’s man.

b. *Practical*. “Having therefore these promises, dearly beloved, let us cleanse ourself from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God” (II Cor.

7:1). “Grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. To him be glory both now and forever. Amen” (II Peter 3:18).

This is our present state of sanctification. A saint never grows up to sanctification, but grows *in* sanctification. Every believer is a saint; however, some believers do not act like saints. The living Christian still has the flesh in him and obeys it at times. Then God, by Jesus Christ, through the Holy Spirit, metes out chastisement. See John 17:17; I Thessalonians 4:3; Hebrews 12:10; II Corinthians 3:18.

c. *Final*. Perfect sanctification will occur in the future at Christ’s second coming.

“The Lord make you to increase and abound in love one toward another, and toward all men, even as we do toward you: to the end he may stablish your hearts unblameable in holiness before God, even our Father, at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ with all his saints” (I Thess. 3:12, 13).

C. *Condition*.

1. *The Divine Side*.

a. *Through God the Father.* “Sanctify unto me all the firstborn, whatsoever openeth

p160

the womb among the children of Israel, both of man and of beast: it is mine” (Ex. 13:2).

b. *Through Jesus Christ the Son.* “Jesus also, that he might sanctify the people with his own blood, suffered without the gate” (Heb. 13:12).

c. *Through the Holy Spirit.* “We are bound to give thanks alway to God for you, brethren beloved of the Lord, because God hath from the beginning chosen you to salvation through sanctification of the Spirit and belief of the truth” (II Thess. 2:13).

2. *The Human Side.*

a. *Faith in the Redemptive Work of Christ.* “Of him [God] are ye in Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us wisdom, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption” (I Cor. 1:30).

b. *Study of and Obedience to the Word of God.* “Now ye are clean through the word which I have spoken unto you” (John 15:3).

c. *Through Yieldedness.* “I speak after the manner of men because of the infirmity of your flesh: for as ye have yielded your members servants to uncleanness and to iniquity unto iniquity; even so now yield your members servants to righteousness unto holiness” (Rom. 6:19).

d. *Through Chastening.* “Whom the Lord loveth he chasteneth, and scourgeth every son whom he receiveth...Now no chastening for the present seemeth to be joyous, but grievous: nevertheless, afterward it yieldeth the peaceable fruit of righteousness unto them which are exercised thereby” (Heb. 12:6, 11).

D. *Definition.*

1. Sanctification is the work of Christ for the believer, which sets him apart for God.

2. Sanctification is that work of God in the believer, through the Spirit and the Word, which changes him into the image of Christ progressively.

3. Sanctification is the work of God which perfects the believer in the likeness of Christ by His appearing in glory.

VI. Adoption

A. Citation.

“Not only they [the whole creation], but ourselves also, which have the firstfruits of the Spirit, even we ourselves groan within ourselves, waiting for the adoption, to wit, the redemption of our body (Rom. 8:23). There are four other places in the New Testament where the word “adoption” is mentioned: Romans 8:15; 9:4; Galatians 4:4, 5; Ephesians 1:5.

B. Explanation.

The English word “adoption” has an entirely different meaning than the Greek word or the Oriental custom. The English word means to take a person from another family and

p161

make him legally one’s own son or daughter. The Greek word, however, means “placing as a son.”

In New Testament times, when the boy or girl was a minor, he or she differed little from a slave (Gal. 4:1). Upon the day appointed by the father, at the age from twelve to fourteen, a celebration was held declaring the child of age. Thus the boy or girl was made a son or daughter. A boy or girl was born into the family as a child; upon reaching majority, the boy or girl was declared a son or daughter. The same is true in the case of the believer. He is not adopted into the family of God; he is born into the family of God.

By birth, he is a child of God; by adoption he *shall be* a son of God.

C. Origination.

“He hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love: having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will” (Eph. 1:4, 5).

D. Consummation.

We are now only the *children* of God. “Ye are all sons of God, through faith, in Christ Jesus” (Gal. 3:26, R.V.⁶⁷). We will become *sons*

67 The actual Bible renders this verse, “For ye are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus.” One would better trust fifty-seven exceptional linguists who took seven years to exactly translate the whole Holy Bible, for determining where “children” should be used for the Greek *uios* and “by” should be used for the Greek

of God at the day appointed by the Father. At that time He will openly present us as the sons of God. We do not look like sons of God now, but some day the world will be able to recognize us as the sons of God.

This will take place at the second coming of Christ. “Not only they, but ourselves also, which have the firstfruits of the Spirit, even we ourselves groan within ourselves, waiting for the adoption to wit, the redemption of our body” (Rom. 8:23).

E. Manifestation.

1. *Delivered From a Slavish Fear of God.* “Ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father” (Rom. 8:15).

2. *Made Possessors of Sonship.*

3. *Made Subject to Both Privileges and Responsibility of Adult Sonship.*

VII. Redemption

The Bible is full of redemption. It is God’s character to save. He can destroy, but He loves to save. The theme of the Bible is Jesus Christ. The message of the Word is *redemption*.

A. Citation.

“If thy brother be waxen poor, and hath sold away some of his possession, and if any of

p162

his kin come to redeem it, then shall he redeem that which his brother sold...And if a sojourner or stranger wax rich by thee, and thy brother that dwelleth by him wax poor, and sell himself unto the stranger or sojourner by thee, or to the stock of the stranger’s family: after that he is sold he may be redeemed again; one of his brethren may redeem him” (Lev. 25:25, 47, 48). “Zion shall be redeemed with judgment, and her converts with righteousness” (Is. 1:27). “In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sin, according to the riches of his grace” (Eph. 1:7). See also Nehemiah 5:8; Colossians 1:4; Galatians 3:13; I Corinthians 1:30; Romans 8:23.

B. Explanation.

There are four Hebrew words in the Old Testament that pertain to

dia. Do not trust ecumenical translators of 1881, and shame on Dr. Cambron for relying on them.

redemption, and all mean “to set free.” The word “goel” is used two ways: first, the One who redeems; second, the act of redeeming. The “goel” was always a near kinsman. While the word “redemption” means “to set free,” it incorporates the meaning “to buy back, to purchase.”

The redemption of the child of God is by his Near Kinsman, the Lord Jesus Christ, who alone has the redemptive price — His own precious blood!

1. *Redemption Declared.*

a. *Is Wholly of God* (John 3:16).

b. *Is Through a Person — Christ* (I Peter 1:18, 19).

c. *Is By Blood* (Heb. 9:12).

d. *Is By Power* (I Cor. 1:30).

2. *Redemption Perfected.* The use of the word “redemption” is presented in the following three ways:

a. *To Buy or Purchase in a Slave Market.* The Lord Jesus Christ came down into this slave market of sin and bought us, who were upon the slave block.

b. *To Purchase Out of the Market.* After one purchased a slave, the master took him out of the market. We are looking for our Master to come and take us out of this slave market.

c. *To Loose or Set Free.* The Lord Jesus is not a slave trader; neither is He a slave holder. One day the Lord Jesus shall set us free from the bondage of corruption and sin, and we shall know the perfect liberty of being the *sons* of God.

In Israel a man could not be a slave forever against his will. After becoming a slave, he could be set free by redemption through a near kinsman, or by waiting for the Sabbatical year or the year of Jubilee, when all slaves were set free. Should he love his master, however, and not care to be set free under any circumstances, he could go to his master, who in turn would bore a hole in his ear and make him a bondsman for life (Ex. 21:6).

Paul said that he was a bondsman of Jesus Christ - a bondsman for life. He was *bought* by blood, *bound* by love. The Christian should have his ear bored, figuratively speaking, yea, his hands, his all. He should recognize that he is crucified with Christ.

p163

VIII. Prayer

Prayer is the essential element of Christian character which is lacking in most believers today. One reason for this is that prayer is misunderstood. Prayer is mostly thought of as asking and receiving. It is that; however, it is much more. We fail to see the value of prayer as communion with our God (Is. 43:21, 22; 64:6,7 R.V.⁶⁸; Zeph. 1:46; Dan. 9:13,14 with Hos.7:13, 14; 8:13, 14).

A. Affirmation.

1. *It Is Sin to Neglect Prayer.* “As for me, God forbid that I should sin against the LORD in ceasing to pray for you: but I will teach you the good and the right way” (I Sam. 12:23).

2. *It Is Appointed by God.* “Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you: for everyone that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened. Or what man is there of you, whom if his son ask bread, will he give him a stone? Or if he ask a fish, will he give him a serpent? If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your Father which is in heaven give good things to them that ask him?” (Matt. 7:7-11).

3. *It Is Commanded by God.* “Pray without ceasing” (I Thess. 5:17). “Continue steadfastly in prayer, watching therein with thanksgiving” (Col. 4:2, R.V.⁶⁹).

4. *It Is Necessary to Ask.* “Ye have not, because ye ask not” (Jas. 4:2c).

B. Delineation.

1. *Abraham Prays for Sodom* (Gen. 18).

2. *Jacob Prays the First Personal Prayer* (Gen. 32:9-12). See other personal prayers (Deut. 26:1-16; Ex. 5:22).

3. *Joshua and Judges Cry Unto the Lord* (Josh. 7:6-9; Judg. 10:14).

68 There is no reason in the world to prefer the ecumenical translators 1881 Revised Version over the actual Bible for these verses from Isaiah. Shame on Dr. Cambron for relying on them, and shame on them for changing God's Words.

69 The actual Bible states this verse as, “Continue in prayer, and watch in the same with thanksgiving.” There is a significant curse attached to the ecumenical translators that added a word to this verse. Shame on Dr. Cambron for trusting them.

4. *Samuel Prays As an Intercessor* (I Sam 7:5, 12).

5. *David Prays With Thanksgiving* (II Sam. 7).

6. *Believers Pour Out Their Hearts to God* (Ps. 42:4; 62:8).

C. *Explanation.*

1. *Presbyterian Catechism.* “Prayer is the offering up of our desires to God, for things agreeable to His will in the name of Christ with confession of our sins and thankful

p164

acknowledgment of his mercy.”

2. *Scriptural Definition.*

a. *As a Child Going to the Father.* “Ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry Abba, Father” (Rom.

8:15).

b. *As a Child Crying to the Father.* “Lord. what wilt thou have me to do?” (Acts 9:6).

c. *As a Child Desiring to Be With the Father.* “Jabez called on the God of Israel, saying, Oh that thou wouldest bless me indeed, and enlarge my coast, and that thine hand might be with me, and that thou wouldest keep me from evil, that it may not grieve me!

And God granted him that which he requested” (I Chron. 4:10).

d. *As a Child Petitioning the Father.* “When heaven is shut up, and there is no rain, because they have sinned against thee; if they should pray toward this place, and confess thy name, and turn from their sin, when thou afflictest them: then hear thou in heaven” (I Kings 8:35, 36).

e. *As a Child Asking Intercession of the Father.* “When he had taken the book, the beast and four and twenty elders fell down before the Lamb, having every one of them harps, and golden vials full of odours, which are the prayers of the saints” (Rev. 5:8). See also Revelation 8:34.

f. *As a Child Waiting in Silence Before God.* “LORD, thou hast heard the desire of the humble: thou wilt prepare their heart, thou wilt cause thine ear to hear” (Ps. 10:17).

3. *Human Experience.* By this we mean that the saints of God have found these truths through prayer.

a. *It Is a Fervent Mind Settled On God.*

b. *It Is Laborious in Its Task* (Col. 4:12).

c. *It Is a Business.*

D. *Stimulation.*

1. *Abundant Testimony of Christians Proves That God Answers Prayer.*

2. *Universality of Phrases in Scripture: Whosoever, Whatsoever, Whensoever.*

3. *The Wealth of the Promises by God to Praying Believers.*

4. *The Confidence of Access Through Jesus Christ.* “Having therefore, brethren, boldness to enter into the holy place by the blood of Jesus, by the way which he dedicated for us, a new and living way through the veil, that is to say, his flesh; and having a great priest over the house of God; let us draw near with a true heart in fulness of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience: and having our bodies washed with pure water” (Heb. 10:19-22, R.V.⁷⁰).

5. *The Assurance of Help by the Holy Spirit.* “The Spirit helpeth our infirmities: for we know not what we should pray for as we ought: but the Spirit itself maketh intercession for us with groanings which cannot be uttered” (Rom. 8:26).

p165

6. *The Revelation of God by Christ.* “No man hath seen God at any time; the only begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, he hath declared him” (John 1:18).

7. *The Limitless Supply of Grace in Christ.* “My God shall supply all your need according to his riches in glory by Christ Jesus” (Phil. 4:19).

8. *The Unlimited Possibility of Faith.* “Jesus said unto him, If thou canst believe, all things are possible to him that believeth” (Mark 9:23).

⁷⁰ The actual Bible states these verses as, “Having therefore, brethren, boldness to enter into the holiest by the blood of Jesus, By a new and living way, which he hath consecrated for us, through the veil, that is to say, his flesh; And having an high priest over the house of God; Let us draw near with a true heart in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience, and our bodies washed with pure water.” The ecumenical translators failed to distinguish between “the holy place” and the Holy Bible's “the holiest,” used a lesser verb “dedicated” for the stronger “consecrated,” miss-designated the “new and living way” as a only a path through a veil, miss-designated an OT “high priest” as only a great priest, and ... I need not continue with this perversion. Shame on Dr. Cambren for trusting them.

9. *The Abundant Ability of God*. “Now unto him that is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that worketh in us, unto him be glory” (Eph. 3:20).

E. Illustration.

1. *Abraham Interceding for Sodom* (Gen. 18:22, 23; 19:29).
 2. *Prayer of Abraham’s Servant* (Gen. 24:12).
 3. *Personal Prayer of Jacob* (Gen. 32:9-12).
 4. *Moses’ Intercession for Israel* (Ex. 32:11-14, 30-34; Num. 14:11-21).
 5. *Samuel Interceding for King and People* (I Sam. 12:6-25).
 6. *Elijah Praying for Fire and Water* (I Kings 18:25-41; James 5:17, 18).
 7. *Nehemiah’s Prayer for Jerusalem* (Neh. 2:4).
 8. *Joshua’s Prayer for Discernment* (Josh. 7:7-9).
 9. *Samson’s Prayer for Renewed Strength* (Judg. 16:28).
 10. *Hannah’s Prayer for a Child* (I Sam. 1:10, 11).
 11. *David’s Prayer of Penitence* (Ps. 51).
 12. *Solomon’s Prayer for Wisdom* (I Kings 3:5-9).
 13. *Solomon’s Prayer of Dedication* (I Kings 8:25-53).
 14. *Jonah’s Prayer for Deliverance* (Jonah 2).
 15. *Habakkuk’s Prayer of Praise* (Hab. 3).
- p166
16. *Paul’s Intercession for the Saints* (Eph. 1:15-23; 3:14-21; Col. 1:9-14).
 17. *The Malefactor’s Prayer for Forgiveness* (Luke 23: 42, 43).
 18. *Stephen’s Prayer of Submission* (Acts 7:59, 60).
 19. *The Lord Jesus’ Prayer for Strength* (Matt. 26:27-46).
 20. *The Bible’s Last Prayer* (Rev. 22:20).

F. Regulation.

1. *As to the Posture of the Body*. There is much supposition concerning the posture of the body while in prayer. Some contend that prayer is not prayer unless one is on his knees, believing it to be blasphemous to pray while walking, and the like. According to the following Scriptures there is *no* set rule as to the position of the body in prayer:

a. *Christ on His Face*. “He went a little farther, and fell on his face, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass

from me: nevertheless not as I will, but as thou wilt” (Matt. 26:39).

b. *Solomon on His Knees*. “It was so, that when Solomon had made an end of praying all this prayer and supplication unto the LORD, he arose from before the altar of the LORD, from kneeling on his knees with his hands spread up to heaven” (I Kings 8:54).

c. *Peter on the Water*. “Lord, save me” (Matt. 14:30c).

d. *Thief on the Cross*. “Lord, remember me when thou comest into thy kingdom” (Luke 23:42).

e. *Elijah With Face Between His Knees*. “So Ahab went up to eat and to drink. And Elijah went up to the top of Carmel; and he cast himself down upon the earth, and put his face between his knees” (I Kings 18:42).

f. *David on His Bed*. “I am weary with my groaning; all the night make I my bed to swim; I water my couch with my tears” (Ps. 6:6).

2. *As to Time*. Many poems have been written suggesting the time to pray. We do know that the Christian should select a time when it is the most convenient for him to be alone with the Lord. Here again there is no regulation stipulated. Notice the following examples:

a. *Daniel: Three Times a Day*. “Now when Daniel knew that the writing was signed, he went into his house; and his windows being open in his chamber toward Jerusalem, he kneeled upon his knees three times a day, and prayed, and gave thanks before his God as he did aforetime” (Dan. 6:10).

b. *Christ: Early in the Morning*. “In the morning, rising up a great while before day, he went out, and departed into a solitary place, and there prayed” (Mark 1:35).

c. *Peter and John: Hour of Prayer (3 P.M.)*. “Now Peter and John went up together into the temple at the hour of prayer, being the ninth hour” (Acts 3:1).

3. *As to Place*. Where is the place God meets man today? The Lord Jesus said, “Woman, believe me, the hour cometh, when ye shall neither in this mountain, nor yet at

p167

Jerusalem, worship the Father. . . . But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth; for the Father seeketh such to worship him” (John 4:21, 23). Here, too, we see that no definite place is commanded:

a. *Christ in the Garden*: “Then cometh Jesus with them unto a place called Gethsemane, and said unto the disciples, Sit ye here, while I go and pray yonder” (Matt. 26:36).

b. *Christ on the Grass*. “He commanded the multitude to sit down on the grass, and took the five loaves, and the two fishes, and looking up to heaven, he blessed, and brake, and gave the loaves to his disciples, and the disciples to the multitude” (Matt. 14:19).

c. *Christ on a Mountain*. “It came to pass in those days, that he went out into a mountain to pray, and continued all night in prayer to God” (Luke 6:12).

d. *Paul in a Storm on Board Ship* (Acts 27). Where is the place the Christian should pray? Christ said, “Thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father, which is in secret; and thy Father which seeth in secret shall reward thee openly” (Matt. 6:6). Where is the closet, and how may one close the door? The closet is any place where the believer may closet himself from the outside world. It may be on a bus, walking on the street, or it may be in a closed room. It is a place where he and God are alone together.

G. *Conditions*.

What will it take to get our prayers answered? The Christian is one who asks to receive.

The following truths guarantee answers to prayer.

1. *Confidence*. “Without faith it is impossible to please him: for he that cometh to God must believe that he is, and that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him” (Heb.11:6).

2. *Earnestness*. “I say unto you, Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find: knock, and it shall be opened unto you” (Luke 11:9). *Ask*: Matthew 7:7; *seek*: James 5:17; *knock*: Acts 12:5.

3. *Definiteness*. “If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your Father which is in heaven give good gifts to them that ask him” (Matt. 7:11).

4. *Persistence*. “Continue in prayer, and watch in the same with thanksgiving” (Col. 4:2). See also Luke 18:1-8.

5. *Faith*. “I say unto you, What things soever ye desire, when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them” (Mark

11:24).

6. *Submission*. “This is the confidence that we have in him, that, if we ask anything according to his will he heareth us: and if we know that he hear us, whatsoever we ask, we know that we have the petitions that we desire of him” (I John 5:14, 15). When we ask according to His will, then *two* have agreed, thus assuring that prayer will be

p168

answered. “Again I say unto you, That if two of you shall agree on earth as touching anything that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father which is in heaven” (Matt. 18:19).

H. Limitation.

1. *Through Spiritual Profanation*. This is well illustrated in the life of Esau. Paul bids us to look diligently “lest there be any fornicator, or profane person, as Esau, who for one morsel of meat sold his birthright. For ye know how that afterward, when he would have inherited the blessing, he was rejected: for he found no place of repentance though he sought it carefully with tears” (Heb. 12:16, 17). Esau gave away the blessings that went with the birthright. That which he sold was gone forever. In the Christian life lost days and lost opportunities are gone. Yesterday is gone forever.

2. *Through Judicial Penalties*. “Speak unto them, and say unto them, Thus saith the Lord GOD; Every man of the house of Israel that setteth up his idols in his heart, and putteth the stumblingblock of his iniquity before his face, and cometh to the prophet; I the LORD will answer him that cometh according to the multitude of his idols” (Ezek. 14:4).

See also Deuteronomy 3:25-27; Jeremiah 15:1.

3. *Through Lack of Action*. “The LORD said unto Moses, Wherefore criest thou unto me? speak unto the children of Israel, that they *go forward*” (Ex. 14:15). To be sure there is a time to “stand still and see the salvation of the LORD,” but there is also the time to go forward.

4. *Through Insincerity*. “When thou prayest, thou shalt not be as the hypocrites are, for they love to pray standing in the synagogue and in the corner of the streets, that they may be seen of men. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward” (Matt. 6:5).

5. *Through Carnal Motives*. “Ye ask, and receive not, because ye

ask amiss, that ye may consume it upon your lust” (Jas. 4:3).

6. *Through Unbelief*. “Let him ask in faith, nothing wavering. For he that wavereth is like a wave of the sea driven with the wind and tossed. For let not that man think that he shall receive anything of the Lord” (Jas. 1:6, 7).

7. *Through Cherished Sin*. “If I regard iniquity in my heart, the Lord will not hear me” (Ps. 66:18).

8. *Through Failure to Ask*. “Ye have not, because ye ask not” (Jas. 4:2c). Some find a conflict with the above verse and Matthew 6:8: “Be not ye therefore like unto them: for your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye ask him.” They reason that if the Father knows what we have need of, why then should they pray? This has hurt the prayer life of many Christians. It should not. It is true that our Father knows everything we have need of; if He didn’t He would not be God. His knowledge, however, is not a guarantee that we shall have the needed things: “Ye have not, because ye ask not.” Yes, the Father knows what we need, but we have to pray for it. We are warned, nevertheless, that we cannot fool God and ask for things we do not need.

p169

I. Mediation.

“There is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus” (ITim. 2:5). “In whom we have boldness and access with confidence by the faith of him” (Eph. 3:12). See also John 16:24-26, “Through him we both have access by one Spirit unto the Father” (Eph. 2:18). This is the Scriptural formula for the presentation of prayers: To the Father, through the Son, by the Spirit.

Prayers should contain the following:

1. Adoration.
2. Thanksgiving.
3. Confession.
4. Supplication.
5. Intercession.

p170⁷¹

71 Mark G. Cambron, *Bible Doctrines*, 1954, Grand Rapids, Michigan, Zondervan Publishing House, 185-210

Chapter 3 Understanding The Biblical New Birth Clarifies Doctrines about Sacraments, Election, and Perseverance of Saints.⁷²

Abstract

This paper is a brief examination of a Biblical model of the doctrine of salvation and its conflicts with the doctrines of sacraments, the doctrines of Calvinism, and the doctrines of Armenianism.

If one were to systematically outline the events that take place when one is born again, the Scripture addresses five aspects of salvation. When we categorize these five aspects it is found that they all occur simultaneously and completely, i.e. no aspect is left only partially completed and there is no sequence in these events, only simultaneous occurrence. These five aspects are 1) conversion, 2) regeneration, 3) justification, 4) baptism into Christ, and 5) indwelling of the Holy Spirit. When we keep all five of these contained in this instant of time called salvation we find that it magnifies and brings into focus some denomination departures from good salvation doctrine. Paul wrote the letter of Galatians because believers were so soon departed from the gospel to another gospel. We are in danger of allowing another gospel "in" if we do not focus on the immediacy of these five aspects of so great salvation.

When we comprehend the scriptures about these 5 aspects of the new birth we can root out more clearly the error of a sacramental belief system that expects to attain this salvation by some Church connected sacrament. When we secure regeneration to the other four and disallow its separation we thwart a Calvinists preconceived notion that it occurs at birth. No matter how strong the need of the Calvinist's philosophical model to move it, regeneration is a part of the salvation package, and must stay in the package.

When we try to extinguish this new life generated by God in a new believer, or to expel the Holy Spirit from its new found temple, or to separate a soul from the union with Christ by a strong Armenian will of

72 Edward G. Rice, Dec 30 2000, Submitted in partial fulfillment of requirements for the course "Soteriology" #404 Video Studies Program (based on spring semester 94), Professor Warren Vanhetloo Calvary Baptist Theological Seminary.

man argument, we are defeated. Coupling of these five aspects of salvation into a single gold ring that may be put on, but never removed is to capture a Biblical model of salvation with such a stronghold as to disallow philosophical tweaking. These five aspect of salvation help us focus and reveal the weaknesses and flaws of other philosophical models of "so great salvation".

I Introduction

Within Christendom there are many divides of doctrine normally falling along denominational lines. There have been efforts to break down the lines and in the words of some, to "not let doctrine divide us and let the spirit unite us." Many have said that we are all Christians we just do things differently; all the same but with different ideas or doctrines, about how to do what we do. In this article, it will be demonstrated that there is a hinge pin where these doctrinal lines divide in their many directions. That hinge-pin is the view and understanding of the new birth or salvation experience as presented in the Bible. It is important to focus on this dividing point (and it is that) because it sets a crucial difference between denominations, between Churches, and between movements that entangle our Churches in the 21st century. Standing between Christendom and non-Christendom⁷³ there exists another dividing line based upon the person of the Lord Jesus Christ. An incorrect doctrine of who Christ is, his deity, his human-ness, his virgin birth, his equality with God, neatly separates away those which are non-Christian. Plainly many of these concede that they are not Christian and call themselves, latter day saints (Mormons, Joseph Smithites), J. witnesses (Russelites) or other religions. Some, however infiltrate the ranks of Christendom and purposely call themselves Christians (i.e. Ellen White's SDA, Modernists following Rationalism). They try to follow the teachings of Christ while rejecting the person of Jesus Christ. The departure from this doctrine of "who Jesus was" makes them infidels to Christendom just the same. Those who do not accept completely the deity of the man Christ Jesus are plainly infidels to the faith. This is not the hinge-pin we will focus on in this paper.

73 Non-Christendom here generally referring to cults, hedonism or non-Christian religions.

When we are fastened on the hinge-pin of who Jesus Christ was; and we call ourselves Christian; and accept the orthodox Christian doctrines as true; a second hinge-pin exists that separates the many doctrinal avenues that are still open. This second hinge-pin is clearly to be found in the doctrine of the new birth, the understanding of what happens when one is born again. Catholic, Episcopal, Lutheran, Presbyterian, Methodist, Baptist, Brethren, even Charismatic and non-denominationalists all divide neatly when we consider the 'who', the 'how', and the 'how long' of salvation. These differences find an epicenter in what happens when one is "born again". Thus this makes a hinge-pin for clearly distinguishing between 'Christian faiths', between denominations and within 'Christian movements'. Biblically evaluating what takes place when a person is saved, and contrasting that with the teaching of a denomination can bring into focus many of the other differences which are often debated in ignorance. Establishing and understanding this root difference clarifies both intra-denominational and inter-denominational squabbling and misunderstandings about the exact syntax of other doctrinal issues. Particularly here, it will help clarify and solidify the Biblical doctrines of sacraments (the 'how' salvation is obtained question), election (the 'who' can be saved question) and perseverance of saints (the 'how long' one stays saved question). Clarifying these questions through a look at what happens when one is born-again, will bring into focus a majority of denominational differences within Christendom.

Purpose

A Biblical understanding of the new birth can bring into focus doctrinal errors about 1) how one gets saved, 2) who can be saved, and 3) how one stays saved. In this article we will model the salvation experience and then examine the effect of this model on the doctrines of sacraments, the doctrines of election, and the doctrines of perseverance of saints.

Approach

The approach in examining this thesis shall be to use Scriptures to construct a model of salvation which includes regeneration, conversion,

justification, union with Christ, and indwelling of the Holy Spirit, to briefly examine some Christian doctrines about sacraments as they relate to this Biblical model, to briefly examine some Christian doctrines about election as they fit with the model, then to briefly examine some Christian doctrines about perseverance of saints as they pertain to a Biblical model of the salvation experience. This examination will not be an exhaustive treaty of these doctrines, but will present aspects of each which conflict with a well developed Scriptural model of so great salvation.

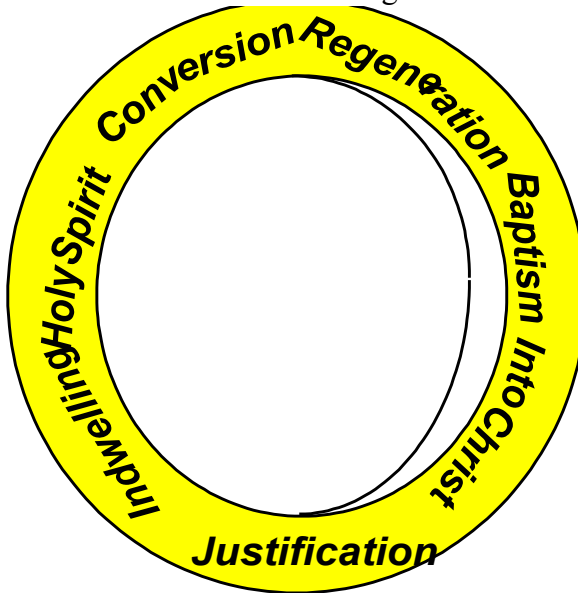
II A Biblical Model of the New Birth

There are two ways of developing a systematic model that captures what Jesus called "being born again", or "being saved", or "receiving eternal life." The first and most often used is to consider 1) the preponderance of Scripture, 2) the orthodox teaching of the past and 3) the logic and philosophy of human reasoning, and then develop a model, choose the supporting verses and dogmatically stick with the model. It will be shown that this method has been widely used and the results take on the names of their prominent developers such as Calvinism, or Arminianism. Such models will often be defended to the death, even when their developments begin to contradict a majority of Scripture.

A second approach, more carefully aligning with Scripture, is to consider the preponderance of Scripture alone, develop a systematic model then contrast the model with the orthodox teaching of the past (as a sanity check and completeness check), and to then consider the logic and philosophy of human reasoning to comprehend the model. We use our deductive reasoning to comprehend Scripture, but we also have a tendency to use our reasoning to twist Scripture and make it fit into our realm of reason. Thus, where this systematic model does not fit our finite comprehension, we do not tweak the Biblically based model, but we compensate our finite understanding with the knowledge that God's thoughts are not mans thoughts. Isaiah 55:7-9 states, *“Let the wicked forsake his way, and the unrighteous man his thoughts: and let him return unto the LORD, and he will have mercy upon him; and to our God, for he will abundantly pardon. 8 For my thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways my ways, saith the LORD. 9 For as the*

heavens are higher than the earth, so are my ways higher than your ways, and my thoughts than your thoughts.” Let us therefore build our model faithful to the Scriptures and let the misunderstandings not be a misrepresentation of so great salvation.

There are five aspects that seem to capture completely what happens to an individual when they are "born again". These are 1) Conversion, 2) Regeneration, 3) Justification, 4) Baptism into Christ, and 5) Indwelling of the Holy Spirit. They are shown figuratively as a gold ring in Figure 1. Notice here that, like a ring there is no starting place nor stopping place, it is continuous unit. The new birth is quite like the placing of the ring upon a finger, there is no time delayed sequence of events, no process over time, but five immediate transactions that occur when one is born-again.



This immediacy of the new-birth, that all five portions occur at one instant in time, is vital to the comprehension of Biblical salvation, and is key to distinguishing between denominations and doctrines.

Understanding the new-birth as just that, an event in time, for an individual, where all five of these ingredients come together and take place simultaneously, clarifies and distinguishes the Biblical teaching from most doctrinal error and denominational differences. The hinge-pin

that distinguishes most clearly between denominations is how far they will separate any of these five events from one another and take them out of a distinct, individual, personal salvation experience. An example developed later but given here for illustration, is the timing of the occurrence of regeneration within the Reformed & Presbyterian doctrine.

The Reformed and Presbyterian's in general hold to individual soul election and contend that a soul in sin is totally depraved, so depraved they are incapable of turning one fiber of their being towards the redeeming act of salvation. Thus, before that person could start down a path that would lead to conversion, he must be regenerated, i.e. given life, called in the Bible, quickened. Regeneration, then is separated from the ring above, and made an event that precedes the new birth. Exactly when this regeneration occurs is debated with several Presbyterian theories. Some suppose it to be before the foundation of the world, some suppose the elect are regenerated at conception or birth, some suppose it occurs just before the new-birth. Their model makes regeneration, or the quickening of a soul, to be a separate entity from conversion and justification.

We here need to carefully develop the timing of these five events and demonstrate that in Scripture they all must occur simultaneously. Then we will just stick tenaciously to the Scriptures as a Biblicist, or Fideist as some have labeled this approach. With this as our basic model of the new birth, we should define each of these five ingredients of the new birth. Then in the next section we will take each and show how they systematically fall out of the Scriptures and how they are tied together in time as a single event.

Conversion is the turning from sin to Christ. This is the human part in the salvation transaction. It equally involves turning from sin and turning to Christ, you cannot have one side without the other and have this transaction complete. It involves a completeness in turning from sin and a completeness in turning to Christ in faith. God is not interested in making any new or special deals here; so one must wholly repent and turn from sin (singular) and wholly grasp Christ in faith, letting go of all else for the security of his soul.

Regeneration is the "that act of God by which new, spiritual life is implanted in man whereby the governing disposition of the soul is made

holy by the Holy Spirit through truth as the means."⁷⁴ Dr. W. Vanhetloo gave here the best one sentence definition of regeneration that this author has seen, the only lacking consideration is that the Bible calls this provision "quickenning."

Justification is best defined by Scripture in 2Cor 5:21 *For he hath made him (Christ) to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him.* Being saved from the condemnation of sin involves coming under the umbrella of what Christ did for us. Justification, then, is a heavenly judicial declaration of 1) remission of sin and of 2) restoration to God.

Baptism into Christ often called the union with Christ, this is simply being united with Christ. Again probably best defined by Scripture in Christ's prayer in John 17:21-23 *That they all may be one; as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us: that the world may believe that thou hast sent me. 22 And the glory which thou gavest me I have given them; that they may be one, even as we are one: 23 I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one; and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me.*

Indwelling of the Holy Spirit is the actual, literal moving into ones body of the Holy Spirit of God whereby he now permanently indwells us. Again Scripture pictures this superbly in 1Cor 6:19 *What? Know ye not that your body is the temple of the Holy Ghost which is in you, which ye have of God, and ye are not your own? For ye are bought with a price: therefore glorify God in your body, and in your spirit, which are God's.* Also Romans 8: 9 *But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his.* When one is saved, the Holy Spirit of God takes up residence inside them, he indwells them.

The purpose of this paper is not to define and develop these five transactions that occur at salvation, but to demonstrate that Biblically they all occur at an instant in time, the instant one is 'born-again'. We shall develop more fully these five transactions in the next section. Again with our emphasis on the marvelous revelation that all five of them are instantaneous and united transactions. Making this tie, that all

74 Dr. W. Vanhetloo's Syllabus of *Soteriology* #404 Spr 94, Page 42, Calvary Baptist Theological Seminary

five are tied in time to conversion, is what will allow us to clearly differentiate various denominational differences. We can use this understanding of conversion as the hinge-pin to evaluate and bring into focus all other 'Christian' doctrines and differences.

III The Instantaneous Transaction of Conversion

We said previously that: **Conversion** is the turning from sin to Christ. This is the human part in the salvation transaction. It equally involves turning from sin and turning to Christ, you cannot have one side without the other and have this transaction complete. It involves a completeness in turning from sin and a completeness in turning to Christ in faith. God is not interested in making any new or special deals here; so one must wholly repent and turn from sin (singular) and wholly grasp Christ in faith, letting go of all else for the security of his soul.

Examining conversion as one of the five instantaneous entities that make up salvation is somewhat of a challenge because it is, in our mind, the act that sets off the whole salvation event, and is viewed more as a process than an event. Thus, as we examine it, we shall attempt to separate it from all the events, process's and circumstances that leads a soul to the place where he would turn from sin and turn to Christ. And separate it from the after-math of the changes that begin to happen, and the changes which demonstrate that there was genuine conversion.

This turning from sin to Christ is the hall mark of salvation. Conversion, in various forms occurs in 37 verses⁷⁵ of the Bible. It is clearly described in Scripture as an event that happens in an instant of time. A works salvation is very attractive to man. A works salvation is what surrounds and encapsulates 'religion'. This ever present teaching of works salvation is what makes it difficult, but necessary, to look at this conversion as an event that happens in an instant of time. In examining the Scriptures that pinpoint this as an event, we shall examine the aspects of conversion as 1) A new birth, 2) turning (from sin and to Christ) and 3) belief on Christ.

In John 3 there is a record of a religious man asking about his

⁷⁵ Josh 8:35 1Sam 25:15 Psal 19:7 Psal 37:14 Psal 50:23 Psal 51:13 Isai 1:27 Isai 6:10 Isai 60:5 Matt 13:15 Matt 18:3 Mark 4:12 Luke 22:32 John 12:40 Acts 3:19 Acts 15:3 Acts 28:27 2Cor 1:12 Gala 1:13 Ephe 2:3 Ephe 4:22 Phil 1:27 Phil 3:20 1Tim 4:12 Hebr 13:5 Hebr 13:7 Jame 3:13 Jame 5:19 20 1Pet 1:15 1Pet 1:18 1Pet 2:12 1Pet 3:1 2 1Pet 3:16 2Pet 2:7 2Pet 3:11

prospects of getting to heaven. In the course of Jesus' addressing the shortfalls of religion he states "*Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit. Marvel not that I said unto thee, Ye must be born again* (John 3:5-7).

Thus we speak of being 'born again' as an event, and can ask an individual if they are a born again believer. In this explanation, given by Jesus Christ himself, he brings out that being born of the spirit, being converted, being saved from ones sin debt is a voluntary operation or act of belief by an individual. However, it is likened to a birth. Does one voluntarily choose birth, no. What initiates birth? Certainly conception and coming to full term has a role, but even as I write this we wait for twin grand kids to be born. Labor started six weeks early then stopped, and we now wait. We have tried lots of things to help but we often hear that "they will come when they are ready." What initiates the birthing event? God does. In our spiritual life what initiates the spiritual new birth? God does. Can we force it or fake it? Many have, but God is in charge of genuine spiritual birth. We have overlooked several aspects of this powerful illustration let me list a few for your consideration:

1. Birth takes place at a time, thus we end up with a birthday.
2. Birth is a miracle, not just conception and development but birth itself.
3. Birth is initiated.
4. Birth may be labored.
5. Birth is completed.
6. The infant is not in control.
7. It marks the entry of a new independent life into the world

Jesus used this as an illustration of what Nicodemus needed. Not the only illustration he gave him, but a powerful one just the same. We should be careful not to over weight any of these aspects of birth to the conversion of the soul, but so to we should not discard those that fit so well.

Anyone that is born in the flesh⁷⁶ can be born in the spirit. It is thus

⁷⁶ Note here that there has been much disparity about exactly what is meant by Christ when he said "*except a man be born of water and of the Spirit*" The very simplest,

been said by some "If you are born once, you must die twice, but if you are born twice you may⁷⁷ die only once." Clearly this new birth is not a process over years, but an event in ones life. Clearly an infant has little control during this birthing process but lets look at an individuals involvement in the spiritual birth.

Jesus further clarified this new birth with the illustration from Numbers 26 that looking to a brazen serpent saved the life of a judged snake bite victim. As much as an Israelite had only to look at the brazen serpent to be saved from his snake-bite, so one has only to turn and look to Christ to be saved from his sin sentence (John 3:14-16). What was mans part? To believe and to look. Belief alone was inadequate. There must be an application of the belief, but that application had no physical requirement, no gauze or ointment, no water washing or need of someone else to dunk them in magical water. In the word's of the songwriter one had but to "*look and live, my brother live, look to Jesus now and live, it's recorded in in His word, hallelujah, it is only that you look and live.*" Marvelous simplicity. Marvelous availability. Marvelous

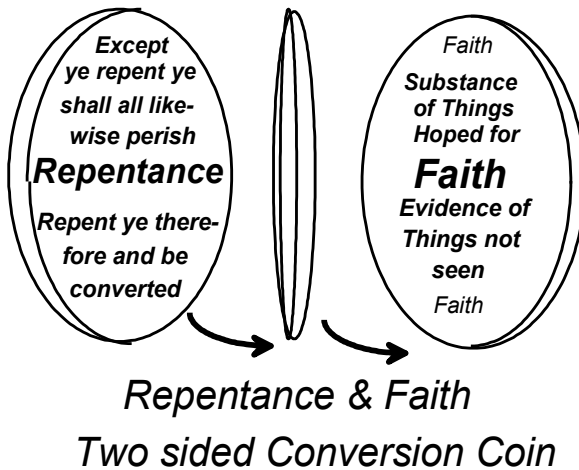
literal, and logical reading is that this is speaking of ones physical birth. To see the kingdom of God, one must of necessity be born first physically. This reading fits into both the argument of Nicodemus who asked if he necessarily had to enter into his mothers womb again, and into the parallel clarification that follows about being born of flesh. Some like to make this 'born of water' phrase mean touched, anointed, cleansed or born-of the Word of God, (because some times the Word is pictured figuratively as water). They argue that if it was physical birth Jesus was speaking of, he would be requiring Nicodemus to be born physically again. No they say, he is requiring that he be touched with the gospel, to hear the Word of truth as part of the new birth. Although, in a system of theology it is the preaching of the Gospel that precedes the new birth, it is a rough and forced fit to make this 'born of water' fit that requirement. Clearly, in context, it is talking about physical birth. Others will muck this portion up further by requiring that 'born of water' has something to do with water baptism. Again, they are guilty of making the Scriptures imply something that they believe rather than taking a good hermeneutical approach to a literal interpretation of this passage. There are ample references to the power and need of the word of God, without stretching this one to go there. There are ample references to the correct teaching of baptism without making this one capture something it is not intended for. To be 'born of water' is simply equivalent to being physically born of the womb.

77 The term 'may' is used here because Jesus himself said "*I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live: And whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall never die.*" John 11:25-26

attainability to all who would believe.

Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ and thou shalt be saved. The word 'believe' has lost its effectiveness today. We say, "I believe it will be a nice day." We say, "I believe the world is round." Believe has been distanced from trust. To capture the intent of Biblical belief on Christ, we must tie the word back to trust, to letting go of other securities and placing the full trust of our soul in Christ. "*Whosoever believeth in Him should not perish but have everlasting life.*" Both the turning to the brazen serpent and the turning loose of all else for a belief in Christ, alone, show two inseparable parts of conversion. Repentance, is turning from, and Faith is believing in.

The best illustration of conversion then is in a two sided coin containing faith and repentance. Accepting the whole coin is as easy as reaching out and receiving. Dividing the two is as difficult as cutting a coin without defacing either side. When one is done with the latter, one does not have a complete coin.



Comprehending conversion as an act of an individual that takes place in their volition at an instant in time leads to several clarifications that should be stated.

1. One can know they have done this as sure as one can know that they got married.
2. There is more than a 'head knowledge' involved in believing

faith.

3. There is no work to be done to deserve conversion, it is an act of faith alone.

4. There is nothing that can be done externally by the individual, his family or a Church to accomplish a souls conversion.

5. There are no sacraments (mystical physical acts with spiritual consequences) involved in conversion.

6. The Church cannot issue salvation via sacraments.

7. An infant cannot be converted.

Let's emphasize a couple of verses again and recognize that conversion is this new birth and new birth is conversion.

John 3:3 *Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, **Except a man be born again**, he cannot see the kingdom of God.*

John 3:6 *That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit.*

John 3:14-18 *And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of man be lifted up: 15 That whosoever **believeth in him** should not perish, but have eternal life. 16 For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever **believeth in him** should not perish, but have everlasting life. 17 For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved. 18 He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.*

Matt 18:2 *And Jesus called a little child unto him, and set him in the midst of them, 3 And said, Verily I say unto you, **Except ye be converted**, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven.*

Acts 20:20-21 *And how I kept back nothing that was profitable unto you, but have shewed you, and have taught you publickly, and from house to house, 21 Testifying both to the Jews, and also to the Greeks, repentance toward God, and faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ.*

American society is filled with individuals who were never converted yet think themselves Christian. There is no time or place in

their life where they verbally called on Christ for their salvation and realized it a completed transaction. They often have spent their lives acting Christian without the new life and assurance that conversion brings. If you are one of these please realize now that *"Except ye be converted, . . . ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven."*

Keeping these things in mind, one goes on in the exploration of events that accompany salvation. Recall that all five of these events, Conversion, Regeneration, Justification, Baptism into Christ, and Indwelling of the Holy Spirit, occur simultaneously and in an instant of time in an individuals life.

IV The Instantaneous Transaction of Regeneration

We said previously that: **Regeneration** is the "that act of God by which new, spiritual life is implanted in man whereby the governing disposition of the soul is made holy by the Holy Spirit through truth as the means."⁷⁸

Once again we are not covering all aspects of this tremendous miracle in this chapter, only establishing the Scriptural basis that it occurs at an instant in time in an individuals life, that it occurs simultaneously with the new birth, and that this new birth also includes the other four ingredients of Conversion, Justification, Baptism into Christ, and Indwelling of the Holy Spirit.

The word regeneration appears only twice in the Bible, in Matt 19:28 and Tit 3:5.

*Matt 19:28 And Jesus said unto them, Verily I say unto you, That ye which have followed me, in the **regeneration** when the Son of man shall sit in the throne of his glory, ye also shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel.*

*Tit 3:5 Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of **regeneration**, and renewing of the Holy Ghost;*

So here the part of regeneration we are interested in might be better conceived with the word quickened. The word quickened, meaning made alive, is used 25 times in the Bible, 10 in the NT and 15 times in

⁷⁸ Dr. W. Vanhetloo's Syllabus of *Soteriology* #404 Spr 94, Page 42, Calvary Baptist Theological Seminary

Psalms. The fact that the new birth described in John 3 is tied with new spiritual life, quickening or regeneration is indisputable. The descriptions of the new life being just that, a “new” life, where one once was dead and now is made alive are throughout the epistles. We want to examine some of these references in order to establish that regeneration can not precede conversion nor can it be something that tags along or develops later in our Christian life.

Let's notice from scripture that Jesus Christ is the one who quickeneth, and he does so to whom he pleases. *John 5:21 For as the Father raiseth up the dead, and quickeneth them; even so the Son quickeneth whom he will.* We do not quicken ourselves and it is not thus a process but an event in our lives. Christ uses the spirit in this act of quickening. *John 6:63 It is the spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life.* There is an interesting development that can be made just by looking at the use of God's word in this quickening action. The psalm about His word, Psalm 119, shows in 12 verses the different relationships of God's word to quickening.⁷⁹

1. Rom 8:11 But if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, he that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies by his Spirit that dwelleth in you.

2. I Cor 15:36 Thou fool, that which thou sowest is not quickened, except it die:

3. I Cor 15:45 And so it is written, The first man Adam was made a living soul; the last Adam was made a quickening spirit.

4. Eph 2:1 And you hath he quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins;

5. Eph 2:5 Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;)

6. Col 2:13 And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses;

7. I Tim 6:13 I give thee charge in the sight of God, who quickeneth all things, and [before] Christ Jesus, who before Pontius Pilate witnessed a good confession;

79 Reference Psal 119:25,40,50,88,93,107,149,154,156, 159

8. 1Pet 3:18 For Christ also hath once suffered for sins, the just for the unjust, that he might bring us to God, being put to death in the flesh, but quickened by the Spirit:

9. Luke 15:24 For this my son was dead, and is alive again; he was lost, and is found. And they began to be merry.

10. Luke 15:32 It was meet that we should make merry, and be glad: for this thy brother was dead, and is alive again; and was lost, and is found.

11. Rom 6:11 Likewise reckon ye also yourselves to be dead indeed unto sin, but alive unto God through Jesus Christ our Lord.

The most vivid delineation of quickening is found in Ephesians 2.

And you hath he quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins; Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience:... But God, who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us, Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;) Ephesians 2:1-2, 4-5

At the new birth, when saved, we are quickened. This is integral with salvation and is indeed the very reception of the eternal life which is a product of salvation. A saved one, in present tense, does indeed “have everlasting life.” When considering this quickening alone, there are only two ways one could lose salvation, 1) if this quickening were not accomplished at salvation, but held out in the future as a reward for keeping the faith or enduring to the end. Such a possibility directly contradicts John 3:16 and Ephesians 2. 2) If this quickening were withdrawn from an individual, i.e. God reached into the soul and killed the eternal life which he had previously made alive. One cannot lose quickening, we have God's Word on it.

V The Instantaneous Transaction of Justification

Justification is probably the most studied of the five aspects of salvation. It is certainly the best illustrated throughout scripture. We had

previously defined justification as follows:

Justification is best defined by Scripture in II Cor 5:21 *For he hath made him (Christ) to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him.* Being saved from the condemnation of sin is coming under the umbrella of what Christ did for us. Justification then is a heavenly judicial declaration of 1) remission of sin and of 2) restoration to God.

Justification is illustrated for us in Scriptures in four predominant ways. These are found in Jesus' keen description of salvation in John 3:16. "*For God so loved the world*", this presents the **moral analogy** of justification; "*That he gave*", this presents the **commercial analogy** of justification, the purchasing of souls; "*His only begotten Son*", this presents the **legal analogy**, of a substitute, a surety; "*that whosoever believeth on Him, should not perish*", lastly the **sacrificial analogy** of God's justification of man is presented; "*but hath everlasting life*", praise the Lord this emphasizes the present possession of this so great salvation.

We shall not here endeavor to visit each of these analogies of justification, but to illustrate the timing of this justification to show how it aligns with the other four in our model. When Jesus cried "it is finished" certainly the justification of mankind was a finished act. The love of God had been fully demonstrated (moral analogy); the price had been paid (commercial analogy); the substitution had been complete (legal analogy); and the last sacrifice had been made (sacrificial analogy). However, though the justification of mankind was complete, the transactions that applied that justification to individuals had just begun. Let's examine that application.

God's love provided salvation as a free gift to man. Man must receive the gift or it is not his possession. God's redemption of mankind is akin to the man purchasing the whole field to possess the hid treasure in it's midst (Matt 13 or akin to the pearl of great price, same chapter), although the whole price of the field has been paid, only the treasure is taken to the bosom of God. God's provision of his own son as a surety to man and payment of the sin debt is complete, but although a surety may be accepted by a judge, it is not accepted legally until the guilty man agrees that it be applied to his debt to the law. And although the Passover Lamb was slain on Calvary, as the Lamb that taketh away the

sin of the world, the Passover is not acceptable until the blood has been applied to the individual door posts.

I was not born justified. I was justified when I received Christ as my savior in that basement Junior Church class in Gang Mills, New York on that Thursday evening in September of 1960. There, I called upon God, according to Romans 10:9-13 and was converted to Christ. Prior to that moment I was dead in trespasses and sins, but God shewed me that. Prior to that I was blind to the things of God, but God enabled me to see the light that lighteth every man. Prior to that I was responsible for my own sin debt, and I was burdened about that. After that act of faith, in repenting of my 8 year old sin debt and putting my faith in the Lord Jesus Christ I was justified. When did that happen? At the moment I was converted, the same time God made me alive inside, the Holy Spirit immersed me (baptized me) into Christ, and Jesus Christ sent the Holy Spirit to indwell and seal my soul for eternity, all in an instant.

The act of justification is a completed act, but the application of it to an individual's soul is one of the aspects of being born again.

Justification is such an integral part of salvation that little needs to be said to substantiate that it is an instantaneous part of the new birth or salvation experience. It is the hallmark of salvation.

VI The Instantaneous Baptism Into Christ

Some tend to shy from the wording found in this aspect of salvation. To be baptized does not always take water. It simply means to be wholly immersed into. In secular Greek usage of the day ships were 'baptized' into the sea, . . . they were sunk! We are thus baptized into Christ; we are wholly immersed into him. Examine again the key scripture which we already presented for baptism into Christ:

Baptism into Christ often called the union with Christ, this is simply being united with Christ. Again probably best defined by Scripture in Christ's prayer in John 17:21 *That they all may be one; as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us: that the world may believe that thou hast sent me. 22 And the glory which thou gavest me I have given them; that they may be one, even as we are one: 23 I in them, and thou in*

me, that they may be made perfect in one; and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me.

Notice carefully that we are making parallel or synonymous the 'union with Christ' and the 'baptism into Christ'. Again this requires the careful examination of the word baptized without the bias normally connected to this word use. For clarification let's list some of the corrections which need to be considered:

1. Baptism need not be connected to water, but to immersion.
2. Baptism is not connected to purification, checking the modern Merriam Webster Dictionary, one would make a tight connection between baptism and purification. This connection is contrived in error, liking at the strictest sense of the word there is not washing or purification attached to baptism, only immersion.
3. Baptism is not a rite of passage for a child or individual, into adulthood or into the kingdom of God. Again it has come to mean such, but not so originally or properly.
4. Water baptism has always been a symbolic picture of our immersion into Christ, to be portrayed after the actual immersion into Christ has occurred.
5. Baptism, meaning immersion has always been foreign to the picture attained by sprinkling or pouring. These were done for convenience while the misrepresentation of a purification to baptism connection. Such a means does not give fair justice to the Greek word "baptiso" . . . immersion.
6. Baptist doctrine is more about the baptism of only believers who are genuinely immersed into Christ, than it is about the physical method of Baptism.
7. Christ baptizes in the Holy Spirit, the Holy Spirit baptizes us into Christ. John 1:33. . . . *"the same (Jesus) is he which baptizeth with the Holy Ghost."* I Cor 12:13 *"For by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body . . . and have been all made to drink into one Spirit."*

In Ephesians chapter one Paul writes to those who are "faithful in Christ Jesus" (vr 1). One could learn a lot by looking at the many uses of the little word "in" throughout chapter one. Look particularly at verse 10:

"That **in** the dispensation of the fullness of times he might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven, and which are on earth'; even **in** him." When one is converted he is placed into Christ; at that moment. Examine the central Scripture for this for this aspect of salvation in I Cor 12:13. "For by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body, whether we be Jews or Gentiles, whether we be bond or free, and have all been made to drink into one Spirit." This concept of being placed into one body, the body of Christ, is found throughout Paul's writings. Notice its clarity in Romans 12:4. "For we have many members in one body, and all members have not the same office; So we, being many; are one body in Christ, and every one members one of another." Thus, it is clear from scripture that when saved, we have a new position **in** Christ. When do we receive this position in Christ? When we are born? No. When we are added to a local church? No. When we are baptized with water? No. We receive this baptism into the body of Christ, this union with Christ, at the moment of conversion. "If any man be **in Christ**, he is a new creature (regeneration), old things are passed away, behold all things are become new. (II Cor 5:17) We have seen then that "baptism into Christ", is an act done by the Holy Spirit, whereby a believer is placed in union with the Lord Jesus Christ. "In Christ", "In union with Christ" and "Baptized into Christ", then, all properly describe this event which occurs at the conversion of a soul to Christ.

Agustus H. Strong⁸⁰ lists five Biblical analogies for this union with Christ shown as follows:

1. From the union of a building and its foundation.
2. From the union between husband and wife.
3. From the union between the vine and its branches.
4. From the union between the members and the head of the body.
5. From the union of the race with the source of life in Adam.

He goes on to list these direct statements:

1. The believer is said to be in Christ.
2. Christ is said to be in the believer.
3. The Father and the Son dwell in the believer.

⁸⁰ Agustus H. Strong, "Systematic Theology", 1907 p 795.

4. The believer has life by partaking in Christ.
5. All believers are one in Christ.
6. The believer is made partaker of the divine nature.
7. The believer is made one spirit with the Lord.

This union with Christ must occur during a believer's life time. When? It occurs at conversion, regeneration, and justification, not sequentially but instantaneously at ones new birth.

It needs to be clarified that this baptism requires no water. When asked if he believed in baptismal regeneration Lester Rolof shocked his audience in stating "Yes I do." After some consternation he clarified, "It is just that you all have to go the the Stream for yours, Bible believers go to the Spirit." This is Spirit baptism we are talking about, and it gets you a position in Christ. I have crawled out of my position as a believer, but the position remains, waiting for me to get things right and crawl back in.

VII The Instantaneous Indwelling of The Holy Spirit

It has been well stated that "In the Old Testament God built a temple for his people, in the New Testament God builds a people for his temple." The difference between these has been hotly debated but in this section we want to ensure clarity about the instantaneous indwelling of the Holy Spirit when one is converted to Christ. That this is a literal indwelling is brought out in our previous description:

Indwelling of the Holy Spirit is the actual literal moving into our bodies by the Holy Spirit of God where by he now permanently indwells us. Again scripture pictures this superbly in 1Cor 6:19 *What? Know ye not that your body is the temple of the Holy Ghost which is in you, which ye have of God, and ye are not your own? For ye are bought with a price: therefore glorify God in your body, and in your spirit, which are God's.* Also Romans 8: 9 *But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his.* When one is saved, the Holy Spirit of God takes up residence inside them, he indwells them.

To examine this indwelling and demonstrate its occurrence and permanence at conversion, let's again examine Paul's tremendous introduction to a new group of believers at Ephesus. In that introduction Paul lists 3 things done by the Father⁸¹, "to the praise of the glory of His grace"; he lists 7 things accomplished by Christ⁸² "that we should be to the praise of his glory: and he then lists 4 things accomplished by the Holy Spirit, unto the praise of his glory." Examining just the 4 done by the Holy Spirit notice that he 1) caused us to hear the word of truth; he 2) caused us to believe; he 3) sealed us and he 4) is the earnest of our inheritance. Noting there the Holy Spirit caused our salvation and he is the seal and earnest of our salvation it is obvious that he indwells us at salvation and stays till we get our inheritance.

Given that the presence of the Holy Spirit within us is an earnest of our inheritance, it must remain until we get that inheritance. That is how an earnest works. Also this earnest is not given until one has assurance of that inheritance of eternal life. When does this occur? It occurs at conversion, regeneration and justification, not sequentially but instantaneously at ones new birth.

This indwelling of the Holy Spirit is dwelt upon in Romans chapter 8. It is absolutely part of a new birth salvation in this chapter, and the chapter emphasizes over and over the "if so be" aspect of ones salvation. The genuineness of one's salvation is the determining factor of the indwelling and sealing role (Eph 4:30) of the Holy Spirit of God. When one is truly saved, they are truly indwelt, and that indwelling occurs at conversion, and remains till death do us part,... and death cannot do us part in this instance.

VIII The conflict with our philosophy of Sacraments

Conversion contrasted with Sacraments

We have thus far examined the five various portions of salvation and shall now examine the conflict between the instantaneous occurrence of these with the doctrine of sacraments. Broadly we can

81 The Father 1) blessed us with all spiritual blessings, 2) Chosen and Predestined us, and 3) made us accepted.

82 The Son gave us 1) redemption, 2) forgiveness, 3) wisdom, 4) prudence, 5) revealed mystery, 6) gathering place (in him), and 7) purpose.

consider a sacrament as some physical act which produces some spiritual result. Specifically here we are concerned about any sacrament where the spiritual result is thought to be salvation of the soul. We see that any sacrament producing salvation is at odds with our Biblical definition of conversion.

Given that conversion is a non-physical, supernatural act which initiates new birth, it stands in stark contrast with the idea that one can work, or partake in sacraments, to attain heaven. Either one attains a sure eternal gift of salvation via conversion, or salvation is a process of participation in some sacramental system. Both cannot be true. There can not be a little bit of totally undeserved favor, called grace, and a little bit of good works. There can not be a little bit of grace, and a little bit of mystical participation in a Church Sacrament; not a little bit of grace and a little bit of Church work, not a little bit of grace and a little bit of water baptism, or water washing or water sprinkling. The Biblical interpretation of conversion defeats the doctrine of Sacraments for salvation.

When we examine the Catholic sacramental system we find that its tentacles reach out into many works salvation models found throughout Christendom today. The basis for the Catholic sacraments by which one earns ones way to heaven are best understood through their own butter churn illustration. Gods grace, in this Catholic illustration, is poured out like milk through the spigot of the Catholic Church. Man takes this 'grace milk' and churns it into butter through 'good works'. The churned butter represents man made righteousness which is stacked up to earn ones way to heaven. How much man made butter is needed to secure heaven? Well, that depends. It depends on so many things that one can never know if they churned up enough butter or not. This catholic model of the salvation process stands in contrast to Jesus' words "Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted,⁸³ . . . ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven." (Matt 18:3)

Seeing then that the catholic doctrine of sacraments makes conversion a lifetime process of serving the Catholic Church, instead of an instantaneous act of will, we should see it as error and watch for

83 The phrase "and become as little children is omitted here to emphasize the verb "be converted". One converted becomes as a little child, but one who becomes as a little child is not necessarily converted.

strains of this heretical doctrine throughout Christendom.

Protestant theologians, Luther, Calvin, Wesley etc. removed themselves from the churning up of man made righteousness, but still retain some level of sacraments, some physical act to be done or participated in. For conversion, these Protestant reformers properly rejected the Catholic Churches control of God's grace and the churning up of man made righteousness. "Only Scripture! Only Faith! Only Grace! was their battle cry. However, they did leave a remnant of sacraments in their system of theology. Recalling that a sacrament is a physical act, i.e. taking a wafer, or sprinkling with water, etc. that produces a spiritual result, i.e. the salvation of the soul, the purification of the soul, the washing away of sin, etc. In word these reformers removed Catholic control over salvation, they removed all but faith and grace from the new birth, however, they retained the butter churn to aid in sanctification to bring about the spiritual changes necessary in man. This visage of sacraments is forever getting entangled into the salvation message resulting in a works salvation.

Because of the Catholic doctrine of sacraments and the Protestant retention of some sacraments, most of 'Christian America' carry an idea that if they have been good enough and worked up their own righteousness, they might be allowed into heaven. This working toward an "I earned heaven" fits both our material inclinations and the Catholic doctrine of sacraments; but it does not fit the Biblical necessity of conversion, an act not of works but turning loose of our own righteousness, and grasping onto Christ's Righteousness in faith. Turning loose of ones own righteousness is difficult enough, but when one is steeped in the teaching that there are some physical things that produce spiritual results, a mental wall is constructed which keeps many from conversion.

Our Biblical model that connects salvation of the soul with the new birth and makes this event instantaneous with a conversion, regeneration and justification occurring in a moment of time, causes the concept of progressively working up more and more good to deserve heaven wither away and turn a obscure. The whole connection of this supernatural event to any physical, material, performance, such as works for a Church or water baptism is foreign to the Scriptures. It should be carefully kept foreign to our doctrines as well; certainly kept foreign to

our doctrine of salvation but we should also keep the sacramental tentacles out of our doctrine of sanctification.

IX The conflict with the philosophy of Calvinism

Since we have demonstrated that conversion, regeneration, justification, baptism into Christ, and indwelling of the Holy Spirit, all occur at the same moment in our lives, let's see where such a model would clash with the doctrine of election, particularly with Calvinism. Let's first briefly define Calvinism. Perhaps done best here by the following article by W.G.T. Shedd. CALVINISM –a definition and explanation:

The essential parts of this system are the well-known five points of Calvinism, namely, total depravity in distinction from partial; unconditional election in distinction from conditional; irresistible regenerating grace in distinction from resistible; limited redemption (not atonement) in distinction from universal; the certain perseverance of the regenerate in distinction from their possible apostasy. No one of these points can be rejected without impairing the integrity of Calvinism . . .⁸⁴

In this paper I will not deal with all aspects of this doctrine. Only with the misnomer where regeneration is removed from salvation and placed elsewhere. This is not a misnomer for all Calvinists, but it is an attractive error to the doctrine of individual soul election. It is a common error for those who are hasty to lean on the philosophical renderings of total depravity, and how one who is dead could respond to the Spirit's drawing. Focusing, then, just on the time when man's spirit is made responsive to the Holy Spirit look at the Westminster Confession below.

The Westminster Confession of Faith, 1647, Chapter VIII and Section VIII says: To all those for whom Christ has purchased redemption He does certainly and effectually apply and communicate the same; making intercession for them, and revealing unto them, in and by the Word, the mysteries of salvation; effectually persuading them by His

84 William G. T. Shedd. Calvinism: Pure and Mixed. p. 147

Spirit to believe and obey; and governing their hearts by His Word and Spirit; overcoming all their enemies by His almighty power and wisdom, in such manner and ways as are most consonant to His wonderful and unsearchable dispensation.⁸⁵

Their dilemma arises from the logic that man must be regenerated before their eyes are opened to God's "revealing unto them . . . the mysteries of salvation; effectually persuading them". One can not reveal to, nor persuade one who is dead. Look also at the thirty nine articles of the Church of England.

The Thirty-nine Articles of the Church of England in Article XVII states: Predestination to Life is the everlasting purpose of God, whereby (before the foundations of the world were laid) He has constantly decreed by His counsel secret to us, to deliver from curse and damnation those whom He has chosen in Christ to everlasting salvation, as vessels made to honor. Wherefore, those who are endued with so excellent a benefit of God, be called according to God's purpose by His Spirit working in due season: they through Grace obey the calling: they are justified freely: they are made sons of God by adoption: they are made like the image of His only-begotten Son Jesus Christ: they walk religiously in good works, and at length, by God's mercy, they attain to everlasting happiness.⁸⁶

Logically here, the calling and the obedience to the calling can not be done by one that is dead and/or blinded. Thus, within reformed theology, Presbyterianism and Calvinism, there is a dangerous logical tendency to take regeneration and place it at conception or birth, thus removing it as a part of the salvation experience.

The very difficult question concerning salvation, the question of 'how does God do that?' has no simple answer, but moving the act of regeneration from salvation time up to an elect ones conception or birth is a grace error against the Biblical model of salvation. In fact, it so muddies the water that eventually the whole new birth is no longer a golden ring containing all 5 ingredients and available to 'whosoever

85 Schaff. op. cit. p. 622

86 Ibid. p. 497

will', that it becomes a muddled and confused patch work process. It is not so. Although off tract Calvinist theologians pull regeneration from the gold ring of salvation and place it at conception of a soul, You and I must not.

Baptist doctrine has for centuries skirted around this error, and only in the last 50 years have the General Association of Regular Baptist Churches become steeped in the tulips of Calvinism. Article X below treats ones calling and salvation.

The General Association of Regular Baptist Churches Article X states that: We believe that in order to be saved, sinners must be born again; that the new birth is a new creation in Christ Jesus; that it is instantaneous and not a process; that in the new birth the one dead in trespasses and sins is made a partaker of the divine nature and receives eternal life, the free gift of God; that the new creation is brought about by our sovereign God in a manner above our comprehension, solely by the power of the Holy Spirit in connection with divine truth, so as to secure our voluntary obedience to the gospel; that its proper evidence appears in the holy fruits of repentance, faith and newness of life.⁸⁷

Notice the careful treatment of regeneration and how it is brought about in a manner beyond our comprehension. Regeneration remains a part of salvation in this article, but the wording still eludes to the conflict brought on by the Calvinistic tendency to place regeneration at the birth of their elect individuals and not at the time of salvation. Let's once more examine the logic path that causes a defender of individual soul election to place regeneration at the birth of one of these elect ones.

A first tentacle of Calvinism is that man is totally depraved. Their definition of this total depravity is that they are absolutely dead to all spiritual life. Imagine trying to coax a corpse into making a decision. It can not be done. Thus before this spiritual corpse can make a decision for Christ there must be some kind of spiritual awareness, some spiritual life, placed into him. Since, in their philosophy, God chose certain humans for salvation, he only puts this spiritual life into his elect. The placement of this spiritual life, or spiritual awareness in a human is

⁸⁷ General Association of Regular Baptist Churches. Literature Item 1. p. 6

synonymous with the Bible teaching of regeneration, however now it has been made a precursor to salvation so that the Spirit of God can draw this one to himself.

Well then, when does this spiritual awareness, this regeneration occur? At birth! God has his elect souls all chosen so he regenerates them at birth. Suppose they die before birth. OK, at conception. God has his elect souls all chosen so when the genes form from the egg and sperm to lock in ones physical traits, God also locks in their spiritual trait by breathing spiritual life into some and neglecting spiritual life in others. God is sovereign and can do just that. Although I believe the latter statement, God's word prevents such a scenario.

God regenerates one at the time of conversion, at the time of justification, at the time of baptism into Christ, at the time of indwelling of the Holy Spirit. The regular Baptist state that it is in a manner above our comprehension. It is best left there, for the Bible says that God tries the reins of every man, that we are all without excuse, that we all have a knowledge of God that the Holy Spirit draws on every man, that the light lighteth every man, that God is not willing that any should perish, that whosoever will may come, and that if any man come, he will in no wise cast him out. It also says that we are dead in trespasses and sins, that we are blind to the things of God, that no man comes to Christ unless the Father draw him. When the Biblical model of Salvation is incomprehensible to our logic, don't abandon an infallible Bible for our finite logic. Regeneration occurs at conversion.

X The conflict with the philosophy of Armenianism

Armenius (1560-1609) was an outspoken opponent to individual predestination. He, and his followers became expositors of Armenian doctrine which put a emphatic emphasis on the freedom of the will of man to decide his fate. As much as Calvinism upholds a fatalistic view, Armenians upholds an absolute free will view. It is interesting that the Word of God upholds neither. The conflict of our model with Armenian doctrine is not so much with the attaining of salvation, as it is with the retaining of salvation. In examining the issue of retaining ones salvation we still put our emphasis on the immediacy of the five aspects of salvation 1) conversion, 2) regeneration, 3) justification , 4) baptism into Christ, and 5) Indwelling of the Holy Spirit. We emphasize this because

it makes them each, not only un-sequential and immediate in their origin but un-segmented and finished in their completion. In other words on the day I got saved I was as converted as I would ever be, I was as regenerated as I would ever be, I was as justified as I would ever be, I was as united with Christ as I would ever be, and I was as indwelt by the Holy Spirit as I would ever be.⁸⁸

Armenian doctrines, because of its emphasis on the free will of man, leaves ample room for an individual to become unsaved. For an Armenian, when a man, of his free will, chooses to turn his back on God, he forfeits his salvation. Instead of being characterized as a son, he is somehow disowned by God and becomes, again, lost and in his sins. They use some scriptures to support this idea. Scriptures about "enduring to the end" or having "fallen away" are often sought out and bolstered into their philosophy, but what of the five completed acts in our scriptural model. What of the fact that when converted one, present tense, "hath" eternal life? What of the fact that we once were dead but now alive; were blind but now we see? Does that new regenerated eternal life now die? What of the fact that we were justified with our sin debt forever paid? Do we take it back onto our own shoulders? What of the fact that we were baptized into Christ? Are we now ripped back out of him because we did not, with our free will, endure till the end? What of the "earnest money" that was given? Is it revoked and the Spirit, once present is ordered out of the premises? No. By no means. Indeed all five of these aspects of salvation, their initiation and completion on the day of our salvation give strong testimony to the permanence of this "so great salvation". For if we do not attain this salvation by our act, we do not retain it by our act, nor can we slay the regenerated man, pull out of the body of Christ and evict the Holy Spirit from our body and go back under the condemnation of sin by our act or our volition.

Do not then allow an Armenian doctrine, a whiplash away from the error of individual predestination, confuse you about the permanency of the new life, the justification, the union with Christ or the indwelling of

88 We have not brought out in this paper the "filling of the H.S." This differs from the indwelling of the H.S. that occurs at salvation. A filling of the H.S. has these characteristics: 1) an emptying of self, 2) A surrender to this H.S. and 3) The will and purpose of God. Thus a filling of the H.S. may re-occur several times, may last an undetermined period of time and is independent of our salvation, given only that so great salvation has already occurred.

the Holy Spirit. These cannot be denied just because we want to emphasize the free will of man. I am all for a renewed emphasis on the free will of man, and his responsibility for his own actions, however the preponderance of scripture as well as this scriptural model of salvation, demonstrates the permanency of the arrangement made by so great salvation. That which is born in me shall never die, believest thou this?

XI Conclusion

If one were to systematically outline the events that take place when one is born again, they find five aspects of salvation. When we categorizes these five aspects with a clock in hand, it is found that they all occur simultaneously and completely, i.e. no aspect is left only partially completed. These five aspects are 1) conversion, 2) regeneration, 3) justification, 4) baptism into Christ, and 5) indwelling of the Holy Spirit. When we keep all five of these contained in this instant of time called salvation we find that it magnifies and brings into focus some denomination departures from good salvation doctrine. Paul wrote the letter of Galatians because believers were so soon departed from the gospel to another gospel. We are in danger of allowing another gospel "in" if we do not focus on the immediacy of these five aspects of so great salvation.

When we comprehend the scriptures about these 5 aspects of the new birth we can root out more clearly the error of a sacramental belief system that expects to attain this salvation by some Church connected sacrament. When we secure regeneration to the other four and disallow its separation we thwart a Calvinists preconceived notion that it occurs at birth. It can not. No matter how strong the need of their philosophical model to move it, regeneration is a part of the salvation package, and must stay in the package.

When we try to extinguish this new life generated by God in a new believer, or to expel the Holy Spirit from its new found temple, or to separate a soul from the union with Christ by a strong Armenian will of man argument, we are defeated. Coupling of these five aspects of salvation into a single gold ring that may be put on, but never removed is to capture a Biblical model of salvation with such a stronghold as to disallow philosophical tweaking. These five aspects of salvation help us

focus and reveal the weaknesses and flaws of other philosophical models of "so great salvation". The two tables below summarize these five aspects of salvation and show their conflict with some doctrines.

If one is already locked into one of these models then the five aspect instantaneous model can be used to safeguard them from extremes or to draw them back to the truth of Scripture. The surety that all five of these events occur not sequentially but instantly would be a hinge pin to tell how far a belief system has drifted from the Bible. Does your hinge line up properly with the hinge pin? If so the door of salvation can be secured and you can go in and out and find pasture.

Table I Truths Established for Each Aspect of Salvation				
Conversion	Regeneration	Justification	Baptism Into Christ	Indwelling of Holy Spirit
One can know they did this as sure as marriage vows.	I once was dead, and now I live, was blind, but now I see.	One can read and understand this promise.	Like a building on its foundation, believer is IN Christ	One can know when someone moves into their life.
Involves both mental assent and willful trust.	One can know this happened; know there is now new life.	Illustrated in moral analogy of Scripture Done because "God so loved".	Like the body members and the head, Christ is IN the believer.	Leads us into truth.
Wholly independent of works	New life is imparted by God.	Illustrated with the commercial purchasing analogy of Scripture	Like the vine and its branches, the Father and Son dwell in the believer.	Causes us to believe.
No external, physical act done, or to be done by another.	The new life is eternal, it cannot die.	Illustrated with the legal analogy of Scripture.	Like union of husband and wife believer has life by partaking in Christ,	Seals us in Christ.
Independent of self reformation	The new life CANNOT sin.	Illustrated with the sacrificial analogy of Scripture.	Like the Race with the source of life in Adam, believers are one in Christ.	Is the earnest of our inheritance.

A Systematic Theology for the 21st Century

Independent of Church Sacraments	The new life can see spiritual things.	Completed for the world at Calvary.	Believer is made partaker of divine nature.	Will never leave us.
Not done by/to infants.	The new life responds with the Holy Spirit.	Applied for the individual at conversion.	Believer is made one spirit with the Lord.	Intercedes with words that cannot be uttered.
Conversion is an instantaneously completed act with other 4 aspects, not sequentially, but instantaneously.	Regeneration is an instantaneously completed act with other 4 aspects, not sequentially, but instantaneously.	Justification is an instantaneously completed act with other 4 aspects, not sequentially, but instantaneously.	This baptism is an instantaneously completed act with other 4 aspects, not sequentially, but instantaneously.	Indwelling is an instantaneously completed act with other 4 aspects, not sequentially, but instantaneously.

Table II Conflicts Between Systematic Doctrines and Each Aspect of Salvation

The Bible Model	Sacramental Salvation (Catholic, Lutheran, Presbyterian)	Calvinism (Reformed, Presbyterian)	Armenianism (Methodist, Pentecostal)
Conversion the act of turning from sin, i.e. repentance; and turning to Christ, i.e. in faith. More than a mental persuasion. The act of letting go of all else and trusting Christ with your soul.	The Church hands out physical mystical sacraments used to attain Salvation. Conversion is coming into the Church, not coming into the Kingdom of God.	Consider conversion impossible unless one is first chosen of God and then already regenerated. Man is totally depraved spiritually unable to make a decision for Salvation.	No conflicts. Except that the will of man was unaffected by the fall they agree to conversion and thus all can use the will and whosoever will may come.
Regeneration act of God whereby a new spiritual life is implanted in man whereby the governing disposition of the soul is made holy by the Holy Spirit through truth.	Salvation is not a new life implanted but a process of feeding ones soul with sacraments, thus administration of Communion and Last Rights.	Since one who is dead cannot show even enough volition to grasp at salvation, regeneration must occur at pro-creation. God only regenerates those he foreknows will	No conflicts. Except for the lost logic that once regenerated the eternal life may die at the will of the recipient.

Part 08 Soteriology

		accept.	
Justification a heavenly judicial declaration of 1) remission of sin and of 2) restoration to God, accomplished at Calvary, but applied at conversion.	Justification must be a process where our good and bad is weighed to determine if our sins will be covered.	Jesus died for only the elect, his finished sacrifice was effectual for the elect at Calvary. Therefore he died ONLY for the elect, not the world.	No conflicts. Except for the lost logic that once justified the uncondemned may take up condemnation again at the will of the recipient.
Baptism into Christ <i>as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us: . . . And the glory which thou gavest me I have given them; that they may be one, even as we are one:</i>	One has no position in Christ, only an effort to act like him, and someday attain that position.	Inevitable for the elect. Occurs at their acceptance of Christ as Saviour.	No conflicts. Except for the lost logic that once In Christ the will of the recipient may pull himself back out.
Indwelling of Holy Spirit the actual literal moving into our bodies by the Holy Spirit of God where by He now permanently indwells us. <i>your body is the temple of the Holy Ghost which is in you, which ye have of God,</i>	No clear teaching about the indwelling Holy Spirit.	Inevitable for the elect. Occurs at their acceptance of Christ as Saviour.	The Holy Spirit is not considered as a present seal and earnest of our inheritance.

XII What did Calvin Think About The Order of Justification and Regeneration

From <http://www.presenttruthmag.com/archive/XXVII/27-3.htm>

PRESENT TRUTH Magazine Volume Twenty-Seven — Article 3 The Order of Justification and Regeneration

Editorial Note: We here reprint a statement sent to us in 1973 by the respected evangelical and Reformed scholar, Gordon H. Clark. It was published in the "Letters" section of our previous issue of Present Truth Magazine together with a brief editorial comment which we made at that time. This editorial comment is also reprinted here at the conclusion of Dr. Clark's statement.

Remarks on Justification and Regeneration Gordon H. Clark

The special issue of Present Truth Magazine devoted to discussions of "Justification by Faith" is the first copy of the magazine that I have seen. Its emphasis on the "material principle" of the Reformation and its opposition to Romish theology speak clearly to these times when the Protestant churches have largely rejected the Bible.

Among the magazine's excellent pages, however, there was one article — so it seems to me — that did not properly represent the historic Protestant view. On page 18 Rome is characterized by the phrase, "Regeneration — a necessary condition for justification," and the Reformation is characterized by the phrase, "Regeneration — the immediate consequence and fruit of justification." With respect to this latter phrase there are two points to be considered: (1) the article's argument from the Bible is incomplete and in places fallacious, and (2) the historical evidence necessary to conclude that the theology of the Reformation is in view is missing.

On the first point I shall try to be brief. Page 18, column 2, after quoting Romans 4:5 that God justifies the ungodly, says, "This scripture certainly contradicts the notion that God justifies only regenerate saints." The paragraph fails to show any contradiction. The following paragraph correctly states that God justifies the uncircumcised; but Romans 4:9-11 (quoted) does not mention regeneration, as would be necessary for a conclusion about regeneration; and the appended explanation, which says that "the new life is the sign and witness of the blessing of justification," does not reproduce the thought of the passage from Romans, for the scripture says that circumcision (not the new life or regeneration) is the sign. Page 19, point 4, adds to Romans 5 something about a "new heart," which is not found in the text. Finally, so far as Scripture and argument go, page 19, column 2, says, "To those who respond to His drawing, the Spirit gives faith and repentance." Is this not Romanism? An unregenerate sinner, totally depraved, dead in

sin, who does not seek God, whose mouth is full of cursing and bitterness, who has no fear of God before his eyes, cannot respond. He will become able to respond only after the Spirit resurrects him to newness of life.

The second point is the absence of evidence that Reformation theology makes faith prior to regeneration. The only attempt to provide evidence is a quotation from John Wesley on page 21. But John Wesley was a disciple of Arminius, whose rejection of the Reformation doctrines was declared heretical by the Synod of Dort in 1620. Therefore Wesley's theology is not a competent testimony to what the Reformers taught.

One of the best witnesses of what the Reformation taught is the Westminster Confession of 1645-49. Its reliability is such that thousands of ministers from that day to this have subscribed to it. The men who framed it were the most devoted ministers of their day, the most competent and the best informed on the theology of the previous century. The Westminster Confession, X, 1, 2, states, "God . . . enlightening their minds spiritually and savingly to understand the things of God . . . renewing their wills . . . effectually drawing them . . . they being made willing by his grace . . . [are] enabled to answer this call and to embrace the grace offered and conveyed in it."

To which I should like to add John 5:24: "He who hears My word and believes Him who sent Me has eternal life and will not come into judgment, but has [already (perfect tense)] passed from death to life." Note that when the sinner hears and believes, i.e., exercises faith, he has already been regenerated.

Further evidence that this is the Reformation view and that the theologians who remained true to the Scripture so testify will be found in W.G.T. Shedd, *Dogmatic Theology*, page 509: "A man is not regenerated because he first believes in Christ, but he believes in Christ because he has been regenerated." The whole chapter defends this position.

Similar thoughts are found in H.B. Smith, *System of Christian Theology*, page 557, and even in the wavering theologian, Augustus Strong, Volume 3, page 825.

Then finally, Charles Hodge, the prince of American theologians, in successive chapters, discusses regeneration in Volume 2, chapter 14, and

in Volume 3, chapter 15. Faith comes in chapter 16; and chapter 17 continues with justification. It is clear, therefore, that the article herein discussed does not correctly describe the Reformation position as against Romanism.

Editorial Comments

Thank you, professor, for your stimulating comments. We are aware that some later Calvinists have tended to place regeneration before justification. As for Calvin, he declared, ". . . justifying grace is not separate from regeneration although these are distinct things. — Institutes, Bk. 4, chap. 2, sec. 2. In fact, in a certain passage in the Consensus Tigurinus, Calvin very decisively places justification before regeneration, not in temporal but in logical sequence. He writes, "Dum fide inserti in Christi corpus, idque spiritus sancti virtute, primum iusti censemur gratuita iustitiae imputatione, de inde regeneramur in novam vitam."—Cited by Francois Wendel, *Calvin: The Origins and Development of His Religious Thought*, tr. Philip Mairet (New York: Harper & Row, 1963), p.256.

A further comment: Surely you are not unaware that the whole Lutheran stream of the Reformation very decidedly places justification before regeneration. The Formula of Concord distinctly says that "the renewal . . . follows justification" and "succeeds the righteousness of faith" (see Book of Concord, p.253). John Wesley did not follow Luther on everything, but he certainly followed Luther on the order of salvation. We would like some Lutheran scholars to comment on this letter. —Ed.

Further Observations on the Order of Justification and Regeneration

All those who stand in the tradition of the Reformation believe that justification and regeneration are closely related and that one cannot and will not be present without the other. However, there has been some sharp disagreement as to their logical order, if not their temporal order.

There is no question about Calvin's placing justification before regeneration in the order of logic (see Institutes, Bk. 3, chap. 11, secs. 6,11). G.C. Berkouwer also acknowledges this in his *Faith and Justification*, pages 29, 30.

The systematic Calvinists of the seventeenth century, however, reversed Calvin's order and put regeneration before justification. This

was the result of moving the doctrine of an arbitrary predestination to the center and starting point of their theological thinking.

There are several grave difficulties with this order of salvation:

1. It reduces the great regenerating work of the Holy Spirit to a secret act of divine grace which is subconscious in whom it is inwrought.

Wesley's insistence on a very conscious experience of renewal by the Holy Spirit helped to correct the arid intellectualism and incipient antinomianism in this idea of a secret, subconscious regeneration.

2. It tends to elevate regeneration over justification.

3. It turns Paul's doctrine of the justification of the ungodly (Rom. 4:5) into justification of the reborn. This is a Romanizing tendency and bears a remarkable resemblance to the decree of Trent which says that "if they [men] were not born again in Christ, they would never be justified" — "Decree Concerning Justification," chap. 3.

4. It has regenerating grace creating immediately —i.e., apart from the means of grace, which is the preached Word of God. According to the words of Jesus in John 3, the uplifting of Christ is the means of the new birth. Peter declares that the new birth is accomplished by the Word of God (1 Peter 1:23). The Holy Spirit comes to men only in and with (but not apart from) the preaching of the gospel. What is the justification, therefore, for saying that the Holy Spirit regenerates men even before and quite apart from hearing the gospel?

5. The claim that men already possess eternal life before they are justified (see Clark's comment on John 5:24) turns the work of justification by faith into an empty formality. Clearly, if a man is unjustified (i.e., prior to his justification), he is condemned, and the wrath of God abides on him until the moment he is justified in the verdict of the Judge. Justification itself is the verdict of life (see Rom. 5:18). In his *Apology of the Augsburg Confession* Melancthon is quite right when he keeps referring to justification as "justification unto life eternal." John 5:24 is not saying that a man has eternal life before he hears and believes but that, as a believer, he will not come into judgment (condemnation at the last day) because he has already, by faith, passed from death unto life. Just as there is no personal justification without faith, so there is no personal salvation and possession of eternal life without faith. And there is no faith without hearing the Word of God (Rom. 10:17). Dr. Clark asks how it can be that dead men can hear the

Word of God. But Jesus declares, "The hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live" (John 5:25). True, our Lord is speaking in the context of the physical resurrection, but even this illustrates the resurrection to spiritual life by the Word of God. Calvinism is to be faulted when it proposes that God's grace imparts eternal life apart from the means of grace in the preaching of the gospel. For further discussion on this matter of regeneration and human freedom, see the article, "The Legal and Moral Aspects of Salvation" (Part 3), in this issue of Present Truth Magazine. —Ed.

Bibliography

1. Schaff, Philip. "The Creeds of Christendom". Three volumes, 1877, reprint, Grand Rapids, MI: Baker Book House, 1977.
2. ----- . "History of the Christian Church". Third edition, revised in eight volumes, Grand Rapids, MI: Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Company, 1910.
3. Shedd, William Greenough Thayer. "Calvinism: Pure and Mixed, A Defense of the Westminster Standards". 1893, reprint, Edinburgh, UK: The Banner of Truth Trust, 1986.
4. ----- . "Commentary on Romans". 1879, reprint, Grand Rapids, MI: Baker Book House, 1980.
5. ----- . "Dogmatic Theology". Three volumes, New York, NY: Charles Scribner's Sons, volumes I and II third edition, 1891, volume III Supplement, 1894.
6. Strong, Augustus H. "Systematic Theology" Thirty-fifth printing, 1993, Judson Press, Valley Forge, PA.
7. Vanhetloo, Warren, "Soteriology Syllabus" Calvary Baptist Theological Seminary, Lansdale, Pa.

Imputed Righteousness

In the Epistle to the Romans God lifts Abraham's salvation by faith without works to the forefront as an example of how individual soul salvation works (Rom 4). A Bible First instructional booklet⁸⁹ captures this detail in exemplary fashion.

Why is it so significant that God imputed righteousness to Abraham? Proverbs 11:4 gives a glimpse of the vital importance of righteousness in the life of any individual: *“Riches profit not in the day of wrath: but righteousness delivereth from death.”* This states that there will be a day when God will judge all men for their deeds and that the only way to survive is to have righteousness. Unfortunately, all fall short of God's righteousness, or holy perfection. Experience confirms what the Bible has already stated, that there are no righteous people to be found on the face of the earth. *“As it is written, There is none righteous, no, not one: There is none that understandeth, there is none that seeketh after God. They are all gone out of the way, they are together become unprofitable; there is none that doeth good, no, not one” (Rom 3:10-12).*

Seemingly then, there is no hope for anyone. Are all going to hell after death? The Bible says that some, albeit few, do escape destruction on the terrible day of God's judgment. One of those who escaped was Abraham. This is evident from reading, among other passages, Luke 16:19-31 which records the story of Lazarus and the rich man. In this story the rich man was suffering in hell, while Lazarus was with Abraham in paradise. How did Abraham survive the judgment and the wrath of God? Was he not a sinner like everyone else? Yes, he was a sinner. But before he died, Abraham received a special gift from God which saved his soul. The gift is called *imputed righteousness*.

Did you know? The word impute is an accounting term

89 “Bible First!, Vol 4, Lesson 12 – Abraham, Part 2” Euro Team Outreach Inc. www.euroteamoutreach.org, pgs 31-32.

which is defined by Webster's dictionary as follows: "To attribute, to set to the account of, to charge, to reckon to one what does not belong to him."

The following is a brief overview of how Abraham received this righteousness from God.

. God made a statement to Abraham about something supernatural.

. Abraham believed God's statement to be true.

. God saw Abraham's faith, and counted it for righteousness.

It seems so simple, and yet this event became the pattern by which all men would have the opportunity to be saved from destruction on the day of judgment. In Romans 4:11 the Apostle Paul calls Abraham "*the father of all them that believe.*" Later in the same chapter, Paul relates the following account: "*[Abraham] against hope believed in hope, that he might become the father of many nations, according to that which was spoken, So shall thy seed be. And being not weak in faith, he considered not his own body now dead, when he was about an hundred years old, neither yet the deadness of Sara's womb: He staggered not at the promise of God through unbelief; but was strong in faith, giving glory to God; And being fully persuaded that, what [God] had promised, he was able also to perform. And therefore it was imputed to him for righteousness*" (Rom 4:18-22).

Because God imputed this righteousness to him, Abraham's sins were not counted against him. At his death, Abraham stood justified, saved from wrath because he had believed God.

The Bible Says: "*But to him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousness. Even as David also describeth the blessedness of the man, unto whom God imputeth righteousness without works*" (Romans 4:5-6). And again, "*And as it is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment*" (Hebrews 9:27). And again, "*And be found*

in [Christ], not having mine own righteousness, which is of the law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith” (Philippians 3:9).

The Euro Team Outreach's summary of how Abraham was imputed righteousness is worth repeating. God made a supernatural declaration to Abraham, Abraham believed God, and when God saw Abraham's faith, he accounted it to him for righteousness. In all the detailed examination of soteriology, the doctrine of salvation, don't miss this simplicity. Today God makes a supernatural declaration about his Only Begotten Son, when one believes, and God sees his faith, he can account it to him for eternal righteousness, quickening their eternal life.

Semi-Pelagianism and Pelagianism

This work on soteriology must deal in part with the doctrines of election and predestination as they touch “so great salvation” on several fronts. A couple antiquated terms for this area should be noted. Semi-Pelagianism is a Christian theological understanding about salvation, the process of restoring the relationship between humanity and God. It arose among the monks of southern France in the fifth century, in reaction to the teachings of Pelagius and to Augustine's doctrines of divine grace and predestination.

According to the Catholic Encyclopedia, “Pelagianism received its name from Pelagius and designates a heresy of the fifth century, which denied original sin as well as Christian grace.”⁹⁰ Semipelagianism, they say is, “A doctrine of grace advocated by monks of Southern Gaul at and around Marseilles after 428. It aimed at a compromise between the two extremes of Pelagianism and Augustinism, and was condemned as heresy at the Ecumenical Council of Orange in 529 after disputes extending over more than a hundred years. The name Semipelagianism was unknown both in Christian antiquity and throughout the Middle Ages;... The most recent investigations show that the word was coined between 1590 and 1600 in connexion with Molina's doctrine of grace, in which the opponents of this theologian believed they saw a close

90 New Advent Catholic Encyclopedia s.v. “Pelagianism,”
<http://www.newadvent.org/cathen/11604a.htm> (accessed 11/05/2016).

resemblance to the heresy of the monks of Marseilles.... After this confusion had been exposed as an error, the term Semipelagianism was retained in learned circles as an apt designation for the early heresy only.”

Discussion of election and predestination will be addressed in this effort without the use of these rather antiquated terms.

So Great Salvation Insights

Consider the following short essay on the need of salvation:

Msg #1352 The Rip-Tide of Sin

What The Bible Says, Good Samaritan's Penny Pulpit by Pastor Ed Rice

“How shall we escape, if we neglect so great salvation; which at the first began to be spoken by the Lord, ...” (Heb 2:3a). Along the east coast of America there are places where powerful rip-tides flow rapidly out into the ocean. A rip-tide is formed when high tide draws water into lowland areas, and low tide funnels them back through subtle valleys in the sand. An unaware swimmer captured in a rip-tide is helpless to get back to shore. No matter how gallant his effort he is carried further and further out into the ocean depths. Without a savior that will pluck them out of their plight and set their feet back on solid ground, all hope is gone. The swimmer does not initially realize his dilemma. Cries from shore go unheeded. When they suspect their situation may be worsening they swim harder until their whole focus is getting back to the shore. They are certain they can swim the distance because they do not know the power of a rip-tide. The theme of the whole Bible is Salvation. Salvation defines a lost estate, a helpless condition, and a savior who can restore that estate. With Christmas behind us, and a new year before us, it is important to know that no religion, no mass, no penance, and no new-leaf can save us from the rip-tide of sin; you need a Saviour. Those already saved from that rip-tide, rejoice in, and openly worship our Saviour and Lord, Jesus Christ. Those still dabbling in sin, and not understanding the power of a rip-tide put their strength in religion, mass, penance,

peace on earth, and turning over new leaves. Cries from the shore go unheeded. What a loved one needs are cries from the knees. Salvation is of the Lord.

An Essay for week #52 Sun, Dec 29, 13

The Reformed Theologian, and those entangled in their doctrines and/or denominations, thoroughly muck up Soteriology, the Doctrine of So-Great-Salvation. They believe that they are the elect which replaces the elect Israel. Their view of God as the Sovereign Predestinator who chose them for that role overrides all else, and thus they cannot discern Scripture which describe corporate salvation, Israel's salvation, and even salvation from enemy or circumstance. Their focus is on John Calvin's Covenant Theology, his single Covenant of Grace, and his Roman Catholic rooted Replacement Theology. The tentacles of their error reach deep into their doctrine of salvation. They must allegorize, discredit or dismiss all language of the salvation of Israel, all language of the "corporate" in salvation, and all consideration of ones salvation from enemy and circumstance. These dismissals and shortcomings so permeate Protestant thinking that they regularly leaven into Baptist thinking, even though Baptists are to be people of the Book, not people of the reformation.

Consider God's warning and illustration about compromising Israel, when they went confederate with Syria, as detailed in these two essays:

Msg #1411 Christ is the Answer, 4 Good, Bad & Ugly

What The Bible Says, Good Samaritan's Penny Pulpit by Pastor Ed Rice

When I was a lad the mayor of Corning was ushering a visiting dignitary into town, who seeing a sign which read "Christ is the Answer," above the city asked, "So what is the question?" The agnostic mayor stammered, then stuttered, then started a campaign to get that sign down. Fifty years later, the sign is there. God's written record through his prophet Isaiah brings that answer to four leading questions. Chapter seven starts with an account involving the good, the bad, and the ugly. In the days of Ahaz the good king of Judah, Rezin the bad king of Syria, is confederate with Pekah the ugly king of Israel. The latter is so ugly that God and Isaiah never refer to this son of Remaliah by name again. This confederacy against good unites

the enemy of God with a nation called Israel. Now Israel, the ugly, was the union of ten sons of Jacob, who 1,000 years previous, had a name change. Judah the good, slanderously called “Jew,” was the outcast favored of God dwelling in the favored city of God, Jerusalem. Now these are all sure enough real characters in a real scenario, as it were, chosen brother against brothers who leagued with the world and enemy of God. The answer to this ugly mess is Christ, and he shows up in verse 14, “Behold a virgin shall conceive, and bear a son, and shall call his name Immanuel.” God does not just tell what happened in history; in His-Story he tells us what happens. Sure enough, the ugly neo-evangelical is confederate with the progressive-liberal world, in an effort to stamp out and replace the Bible believing remnant who dwell in their 1611 King James Holy Bible. Christ is still the answer, and he is coming soon.

An Essay for week #11 03/16/2014

Msg #1412 Compromise NOT, Confederate NEVER

What The Bible Says, Good Samaritan's Penny Pulpit by Pastor Ed Rice

Christianity has made ugly compromises with worldliness. It is confederate with progressive-liberals. The believing remnant should now pay careful attention to Isaiah 8. The theme is Maher-shalal-hash-baz, wherein the enemy goes quickly to the spoil and makes haste to the prey. When the compromise and confederacy is made, a generation will not pass before the destruction is wrought (vr4). Here, the grass roots refused the Living Water, and rejoiced in Rezin, the bad King of Syria, and Remaliah's Son, the ugly, compromised, confederated, King of Israel (vr6). This chapter places emphasis on “a great roll and the writing on it with a mans pen” (vr1). When judgment arrives like an overwhelming flood the remnant of uncompromised believers are given five pieces of advice. The LORD spake with a strong hand: (1) Make no association, compromise, or confederacy with the compromising majority(vr11-12); (2) Sanctify the Lord of hosts and let him be your fear (vr13-15); (3) Hold tight to your King James Bible, “Bind up the testimony, seal the law among my disciples... to the law and to the testimony: if they speak not according to this word, it is because there is no light in them”

(vr16, 20); (4) Wait on the Lord (vr17); (5) Be a peculiar people, be a sign and a wonder unto them (vr18). I would rather be mocked and persecuted as a King James Onlyite, than use a Vatican bible that rips out 1John 5:7 and more. The doom of the compromiser is sealed and it is rushing in hastily; i.e. Maher-shalal-hash-baz. God illustrates through Israel the horrid consequence of the neo-evangelical compromise. Dr. Kean once said, Three words should be removed from a Baptist's vocabulary "can't", "quit", and "compromise." They all start with "K" so you can just rip that page from your dictionary.

An Essay for week #12 03/23/2014

Critique of other Systematic Theology Soteriology Works

A systematic theology is more than a doctrines book. It needs to systematically review other belief systems and theology works.

Critique of John Miley's 1892 Methodist Soteriology

John Miley (1813-1895), a Methodist, published his Systematic Theology in 1892. It is introduced here because it staunchly refutes the Calvinism tainting all other systematic theologies. It is also superbly organized and utilizes aged reasoning. One hundred and twenty years ago writers worded their reasoning and their arguments with great depth and compound sentences. The dumbing-down of English prose, human reasoning, and judicial argument has produced a society which does not tolerate much reading of the Systematic Theology of Miley, Hodge or Strong. "*Ology*" still has the meaning that the target subject is covered with such depth that one goes on and on about it, examining every angle and consideration. Miley published a carefully structured Soteriology section in his Systematic Theology, but he does go on and on about it. Its prime argument is that salvation is forever deeply entangled in the work of Christ's atonement, and it categorically refutes Calvin's system of theology.

The heart of Miley's Soteriology is knit with atonement which he defines as: "The vicarious sufferings of Christ are an atonement for sin as a conditional substitute for penalty , fulfilling , on the forgiveness of sin, the obligation of justice and the office of penalty in moral government." He structures this argument with the following general outline:

PART V SOTERIOLOGY.
THE ATONEMENT IN CHRIST.
 CHAPTER I REALITY OF ATONEMENT,
 CHAPTER II. NECESSITY FOR ATONEMENT.
 CHAPTER III. SCHEMES WITHOUT
ATONEMENT.
 CHAPTER IV. THEORIES OF ATONEMENT.
 CHAPTER V. THEORY OF MORAL
INFLUENCE.
 CHAPTER VI THEORY OF SATISFACTION.
 CHAPTER VII. GOVERNMENTAL THEORY.
 CHAPTER VIII. SUFFICIENCY OF THE
ATONEMENT.
 CHAPTER IX. OBJECTIONS TO THE
ATONEMENT.
 CHAPTER X. A LESSON FOR ALL
INTELLIGENCES.
 CHAPTER XI UNIVERSALITY OF THE
ATONEMENT.

THE SALVATION IN CHRIST
 CHAPTER I. BENEFITS OF THE
ATONEMENT.
 CHAPTER II. DOCTRINAL ISSUES.
 CHAPTER III. FREE AGENCY.

CHAPTER IV. FREEDOM OF CHOICE.
CHAPTER V. JUSTIFICATION.
CHAPTER VI. REGENERATION.
CHAPTER VII. ASSURANCE.
CHAPTER VIII. SANCTIFICATION.
CHAPTER IX. THE CHURCH.

In Chapter I of his argument John Miley exposes the error of John Calvin's system. He declares that as much as Scripture interprets Scripture, so to doctrine must interpret doctrine. "Thus, beyond the fact of an atonement, we search for a doctrine. We seek to understand its nature ; what are its elements of atoning value; how it is the ground of divine forgiveness." Ergo, one doctrine in a defective system can completely circumvent another doctrine, rendering it completely ineffectual. Under this principle, Miley states:

"A doctrine of atonement must be in scientific accord with cardinal doctrines vitally related to it. If other cardinal doctrines of Calvinism are true, its doctrine of atonement is true. It is an integral part of the system, and in full harmony with every other part, the doctrines of divine sovereignty and decrees, of unconditional election to salvation, of the effectual calling and final perseverance of the elect, and that their salvation is monergistically⁹¹ wrought as it is sovereignly decreed,

91 Miley's 1894 work was received with all the folly of an early text scanner. This

require an atonement which in its very nature is and must be effectual in the salvation of all for whom it is made. Such an atonement the system has in the absolute substitution of Christ, both in precept and penalty, in behalf of the elect. He fulfills the righteousness which the law requires of them, and suffers the punishment which their sins deserve. By the nature of the substitution both must go to their account. Such a theory of atonement is in scientific accord with the whole system. And the truth of the system would carry with it the truth of the theory. It can admit no other theory. Nor can such an atonement be true if the system be false."⁹²

Rather than labor through more of this carefully worded argument, be it said Miley argues extensively that since Calvin held to "the doctrines of divine sovereignty and decrees, (and) of unconditional election to salvation," there is no real need to examine his belief about atonement. "Such an atonement (cannot) be true if the system be false." In John Calvin's system, a person is saved by election and not by

word is either his own creation or it might be *monogenistic* having to do with the theory that all human beings are descended from a single pair of ancestors. Incidental, Bible believers hold that as fact, and not as theory via the American Heritage Dictionary.

92 John Miley, *Systematic Theology, Volume II, The Library of Biblical and Theological Literature*, New York: Eaton and Mains, 1894 by Hunt & Eaton, pg 67-68.

atonement. Miley parallels the Calvinist's dilemma in this regard with the dilemma of the Socinian. Since the Socinian does not believe in the deity of Christ, there is little merit in considering what he may believe about the atonement. It is not effectual. So to, in the system of John Calvin, the atonement is not effectual and, ergo, not even pertinent for consideration.

Of Arminianism, Miley, the Methodist, declares its certain truth:

If the cardinal doctrines of the Arminian system, such as differentiate it from Calvinism, be true, then the atonement of satisfaction, in the Calvinistic sense of it, cannot be true. If the atonement is really for all, and in the same sense sufficient for all, then it must be only provisory, and its saving benefits really conditional. And no other truths are more deeply wrought into Arminianism, whether original or Wesleyan ; none have a more uniform, constant, unqualified Methodistic utterance. They are such facts of atonement, or facts in such logical relation to it, that they require a doctrine in scientific agreement with themselves. Such a doctrine is the special aim of this discussion, not without regard to consistency in the system, but specially because these facts are scriptural, and the doctrine agreeing with them

scriptural and true.⁹³

Such a black and white contrast between Calvinism and Arminianism is refreshing, and true in principle. The system of Calvin has the pre-creation election of souls for salvation and for damnation as its pillar of truth. It need not fuss that much about a doctrine of atonement. But the system of Arminian does not take the doctrine of atonement to its completed end. That system is flawed in doctrine about the perseverance of the soul. When the atonement produces a quickening of the soul, that quickening is not dependent on ones keeping the faith, and it cannot be undone. John Miley's discourse on Soteriology has it directly connected to the atonement. The atoning work of Christ is defined and developed extensively. But, alas, in the Arminian and Methodist system the atonement lacks being a completed work, and their 'hope' is that they might endure to the end and make it to heaven. For the Bible believer the atonement applied produces a quickening of the soul, which can never be undone, it is an everlasting life.

93 *ibid.* 68

Critique of Charles Hodge's 1878 Soteriology

Critique of Augustus Strong's 1907 Soteriology

Critique of Theisens' 1949 Soteriology

Critique of Geisler's 2002 Soteriology

Critique of Chafer's Volume III Soteriology Introduction

It is distressing to lay Dr. Lewis Sperry Chafer's third volume of Systematic Theology, entitled Soteriology, on my desk beside Dr. Cambron's single volume of "*Bible Doctrine*", or beside Dr. Bancroft's volume of "*Elementary Theology*". Both Baptists capture the heart of Soteriology in pages while Chafer does not even present a shadow of the subject in his whole volume. Cambron uses 23 pages in a thorough coverage, and Bancroft uses 50 in an unabridged coverage, while Chafer has 396 pages, that is 33 pages a week for a twelve week college quarter, wherein he never addresses justification, never describes conversion, never mentions quickening, writes not one paragraph on the indwelling of the Holy Spirit, and carefully steers clear of ones Baptism (that is complete immersion) into the Lord Jesus Christ. These five essentials to So-Great-Salvation, all expounded clearly, continually and completely in Scripture, Cambron, and Bancroft are not even or ever addressed in 396 pages of a volume called Soteriology by neo-evangelicalism. Analysis of how such an incompetent 396 communicate could seep from Dallas Theological Seminary is crucial, and unfortunately it is herein ground breaking. The hypercritical content of

this work is centric to comprehending that Evangelicalism, which has not strayed far from Rome and Reformed Theology, is a caustic leaven which has permeated Christendom.

Many strongly disagree with this assessment. Christian Book Distributors (consider that their motivation is to sell books) says that Chafer has “an unabridged systematic theology of unparalleled scope.”⁹⁴ Reporting that Chafer defines systematic theology as “the collecting, systematically arranging, comparing, exhibiting and defending of all facts concerning God and His works from any and every source.”⁹⁵ They report that Walter Elwell calls Chafer's work “the definitive statement of dispensational theology.” and Charles Ryrie says “Though scholarly in the true sense of the word, this work can also be read and understood by those not formally trained in theology.”⁹⁶ Such comments make one suspect a massive evangelical coverup is in place. Chafer's own definition of systematic theology reveals his purposeful departure from The Holy Bible as theology's sole source, or even its primary source!

94 From www.ChristianBook.com accessed Dec 2013

95 In making such a brash definition Chafer unwittingly puts Aristotle Saint Augustine and Saint Aquinas on equal ground with Holy Scriptures and in writing his seven volume work he actually does. Woe!

96 Ibid.

What he ends up with in considering every source is not “unabridged” it is diabolical.

*Dallas Theological Seminary President successor Praises
Chafer's Work*

Of course Dr. John F. Walvoord, (1910-2002) Dr. Chafer's successor at Dallas Theological Seminary, showered his predecessor's work with great praise. He says of Chafer's eight volume work, “Never before has a work similar in content purpose, and scope been produced.”... it is “Remarkably Biblical... appeal is constantly to Biblical authority rather than to philosophy, tradition or creed.” Dr. Walvoord, himself considered the worlds foremost interpreter of biblical prophecy and a most prominent evangelical scholar of his generation⁹⁷, said of Dr. Chafer's third volume “The contribution of President Chafer in the field of Soteriology has been hailed as the most important of all his theological works.”⁹⁸

There is little doubt of Dr. Walvoord's sincerity or integrity in this declaration, but it needs to be highlighted again that when Chafer writes four hundred pages on Soteriology and never addresses a soul's

97 From www.walvoord.com accessed Dec 2013

98 Ibid.

justification, a soul's quickening, a soul's conversion, and/or a soul's indwelling and baptism into Christ, then the most important theological work of the Protestant/Evangelical community is bankrupt of all Biblical doctrine.

Dr. Walvoord himself confesses to the fault, when he acknowledges Chafer's first section on Soteriology deals with Christ's offices, his sonship, his hypostatic union and his sufferings. Therein we find no mention of Christ's substitutionary death, burial, and resurrection. Second and third sections deal with the doctrine of election, not the doctrine of salvation. Fourth and fifth sections concern the work of God and one's eternal security not the So-Great-Salvation referenced in the Epistle to the Hebrews. And the last section covers the terms of salvation, "a section which is most practical and helpful", says Dr. Walvoord. In reality this last section only deals with four terms of salvation 1) Repent and Believe, 2) Believe and Confess, 3) Believe and be Baptized, and 4) Believe and Surrender. Nowhere in 400 pages does Dr. Chafer spell out what the Bible says must be 'believed', nowhere does he spell out what the Bible calls the Gospel of Jesus Christ!

Yet for all its hollowed emptiness Dr. Walvoord still says “The volume on Soteriology, if it stood alone, would in itself assure the author a place among notable writers of Christian Doctrine.⁹⁹” That is inconceivable. Chafer never writes about justification, conversion, quickening, indwelling or baptism into Christ! And yet this Evangelical continues “There is no volume in the field of Systematic Theology which approaches (Chafer's Third Volume) in Biblical insight , spiritual comprehension of the saving work of god, and unabridged treatment of the great work of God in salvation.¹⁰⁰”

Was it emphasized enough that Dr. Lewis Sperry Chafer's Third Volume entitled “Soteriology” never addresses justification, never describes conversion, never mentions quickening, writes not one paragraph on the indwelling of the Holy Spirit, and carefully steers clear of one's baptism, i.e. complete immersion, into the Lord Jesus Christ. And yet the whole of the Protestant/Evangelical world cries out that this is the very best they could ever attain. Ergo it is cried out here that the Protestant/Evangelical world is completely bankrupt when it comes to

99 Ibid.

100Ibid.

describing and defending or contending for and comprehending God's So-Great-Salvation. Reformed Theology, Scholarly Philosophy and Modernist Liberal Apostasy has rendered the whole of the Evangelical World completely bankrupt when it comes to Preaching, Comprehending, and Contending for the Gospel of the Lord Jesus Christ. The gospel is indeed 1) Conversion, by Repentance and Faith, 2) Justification, Declared, 3) Quickening, where once I was dead, 4) Indwelling wherein we are the tabernacle of God, and 5) Complete Immersion in Christ, whereby we forever have a position in Christ.

*Troublesome Independent Fundamental Baptist's Leaning
Toward Chafer*

As troubling as the Evangelical failures are they were well predicted. Indeed the whole point of the Fundamental departure of the last century was one of separation from such an apostate condition. Neo-Evangelicalism refused the fundamentalist position and had as its premise that separation from the reformers apostasy and their Reformed Theology was too drastic a measure, choosing rather a coexistence in their apostate circles. There was never any doubt about where such compromise would land the neoevangelical. Like “Christian Rock

Music” their lyrics were carefully chosen but there was never any question about where their melody came from. If one dare call such stuff a melody at all. What then, might be the position of the Fundamentalist who 100 years ago avowed separation from such apostasy?

Dr. Cambron, Theologian of Tennessee Temple Baptist Seminary, staunchly affirmed that the doctrine of Salvation is captured in the five ingredients fore mentioned. Dr. Bancroft, Theologian of Bible Baptist Theological Seminary, affirmed exactly the same. Neither frittered away a single paragraph of their Soteriology trying to figure out what God had decreed, or who was elect for what before the foundation of the world. They captured the doctrine of salvation very Biblically, very exactly, and very succinctly. But look where we have sunk in the last 50 years of that Fundamental century.

An Independent Fundamental Baptist Pastor with a Masters from Pensacola Christian College, and a Doctorate from Bethany Theological Seminary, revels that “Dr. Lewis Sperry Chafer's Systematic Theology is the single greatest Systematic Theology ever written.¹⁰¹” This self

101 David T. ~~xxxxxx~~'s www.DoctorDaveT.com/Chafer_Systematic_Review.html

acclaimed “Doctrinal Expositor” wrote of Dr. Chafer's Soteriology, “(Chafer's) desire to be 'Biblical' in his Systematic Theology requires (that) he surround his system to the text of Scripture. He is to be highly commended for that.” This well trained Independent Fundamental Baptist Preacher further heaps ten paragraphs of praise onto Dr. Chafer's Soteriology because it tears the “L” right out of T.U.L.I.P.¹⁰² Any Baptist praise for even T.U.I.P should be disconcerting. The whole Presbyterian, Reformed, Calvinistic, Covenant Theology, Replacement Theology is fraught with diabolical error and T.U.L.I.P. Is only the ugly “tip of the iceberg.” Taking the “L” out to T.U.L.I.P. Is like taking Purgatory out of Catholicism. It might deliver a crippling blow to an errant system, but the lie still limps along without major effect. An Independent Fundamental Baptist praising Chafer's 400 pages of Soteriology which does not even address a soul's conversion, justification, or quickening is a powerful indicator of a serious compromise and dangerous blindness. The giant of Neoevangelicalism defies the Salvation of God, and it needs to be reiterated: “Is there not a cause?”

accessed 12/14/2013

102 Total Depravity; Unconditional Election; Limited Atonement; Irresistible Grace; Perseverance of the Saints

Correspondence with Dr. DaveT is included here:

Dr. DaveT's Comments & Response

Subject: Pastor Ed Rice is forwarding an email to you
From: Pastor Ed Rice
<PastorRice@GSBaptistChurch.com>
Date: Thu, February 06, 2014 2:06 pm
To: Dr. Dave T. <email@gmail.com>
Dave, I talked about you and your love for Dr. Chafer's work in this report and wanted to ensure you got a courtesy copy. It will be published in Systematic Theology, and in my written report for credit at LBTS.
Theology Working Group,

Subject: RE: Pastor Ed Rice is forwarding an email to you
From: "Dr. David Txxxxxxx" <dave@xxxxxxx>
Date:2/6/2014 3:28 PM
To: "Pastor Ed Rice"
<PastorRice@GSBaptistChurch.com>

Hi, Pastor Rice,
Thanks for the note. A couple of errors you may want to correct:

- 1) you have misspelled my name
- 2) Chafer includes an entire article on Justification in Vol 7
- 3) Chafer includes multiple chapters on Election in Vol 3
- 4) a search on the word "quicken" returned 30 results in the Chafer systematic theology

You should fact check other faulty assumptions. If your grade depends on the accuracy of your statements, you will be glad you did. Thanks for including me with a giant like Walvoord. That is very flattering indeed, although I will confess I do not belong in such rarified air.

Dave
Dr. David Txxxxxxx

Dear Dr. Dave T.,

When Pilgrim wandered from the straight and narrow path he was assigned, and it was pointed out how far off he strayed, how awful the mire, and how deep the upcoming pit, his first and natural tendency was to justify his error.

I have quite well fact checked my declaration. Your hero might well have written of justification in his final volume titled “Doctrinal Summarization” but in so doing he violates good organization by including in summary something that is found nowhere else in the body of his work. The fact is his whole volume on Soteriology never addresses justification, and I have quite clearly declared the fact.

John Calvin's 1536 magnum opus, “The Institutes of the Christian Religion¹⁰³”, the Presbyterian's 1618 Synod of Dort¹⁰⁴, and Lewis Sperry Chafer's 1948 volume on Soteriology inexplicably tie salvation to election and predestination. The fact

¹⁰³Freely available at <http://www.ccel.org/ccel/calvin/institutes/>

¹⁰⁴See Darby's extensive development of history in R.L. Dabney “The Five Points of Calvinism”

is the Holy Bible does not. The fact is I have well introduced this momentous blunder, even labeling it a diabolical error, and the body of my critique of Chafer's Soteriology provides ample proof of such an introductory declaration. Chafer's multiple chapters on Election in Vol 3 fully support my argument, and your announcing it as important does not justify your error, it only muddies the mire.

There are no faulty assumptions in this introduction to my critique of Chafer's Soteriology. The fact that he speaks of 'quickenings' somewhere in the bowels of his Systematic Theology, cannot justify his bankrupt volume on Soteriology that does not bring it up. When it is pointed out that the Neo-Evangelical giant, Dr. Walvoord and an Independent Fundamental Baptist, Dr. Dave T. are wallowing around in the same pit of diabolical error it is not flattery. It is presented here as an alarming manifestation of the grossest compromise. Prayerfully, I trust you will see how far you are strayed from the straight and narrow and get back in the battle for truth.

The fact that your name was misspelled is the only error

left standing. Because of my embarrassment for you I shall not fix that error, I will eliminate its reference all together. I trust this correspondence finds you turning back from Chafer's winding path and making your way back to the Cross of Jesus Christ our Lord.

Pastor Edward Rice

The breakout of Chafer's emphasis in Volume III on Soteriology is shown as follows:

- Chap 1 Introduction to Soteriology 3-10 2% of vol 3
- Chap 2 The Person of Christ 11-34 6%
- Chap 3 Introduction to the Sufferings of Christ 35-54 5%
- Chap 4 Things Accomplished by Christ in His Sufferings and Death 55-115 15%
- Chap 5 The Sufferings and Death of Christ in Types 116-126 3%
- Chap 6 Biblical Terminology Related to Christ's Sufferings and Death 127-130 1%
- Chap 7 Theories False and True of the Value of Christ's Death 131-164 9%
- Chap 8 The Fact of Divine Election 165-177 3%
- Chap 9 The Order of Elective Decrees 178-182 1%
- Chap 10 For Whom Did Christ Die? 183-205 6%
- Chap 11 The Finished Work of Christ 206-209 1%

Part 08 Soteriology

- Chap 12 The Convicting Work of The Spirit 210-224 4%
- Chap 13 The Riches of Divine Grace 225-266 11%
- Chap 14 Introduction to the Doctrine of Security 267-272 2%
- Chap 15 The Armenian View of Security 273-312 10%
- Chap 16 The Calvinistic Doctrine of Security 313-339 7%
- Chap 17 The Consummating Scripture 340-354 4%
- Chap 18 Deliverance From Reigning Power of Sin and Human Limitations 355-363 2%
- Chap 19 The Believer Presented Faultless 364-370 2%
- Chap 20 The Terms of Salvation 371-395 6%

Critique of Chafer's Vol. III Soteriology Chap. II

For all that has been said about what Chafer did not include in a volume on Soteriology, something needs to be said in critique of what he did include. The heart of what Chafer has to offer any discussion of Soteriology is found in his fourth chapter entitled; “Things accomplished by Christ in his Sufferings and Death.” As was stated previous, Dr. Chafer has no skeleton, i.e. no structured organization, to add meat to, but any miniscule pickings of “meat” are found in this chapter.

Chafer's chapter 2 is completely misplaced. Parts of this chapter

might find outline space in Christology, but even there, Chafer's trite outlining methods and his verbosity makes the chapter very undesirable. It is disquieting to say that a chapter on the person of the Savior could be totally discarded. It is indeed totally misplaced. But it is also observed that the first sentence of the letters to The Hebrews has more about the Saviour than does the misplaced chapter by Chafer. He tries to use catchy outlines, like; "Son of God, Son of Man, Son of David and Son of Abraham," but such preachable outlines can not excuse the responsibility levied on the Systematic Theologian. Chafer is not systematic in any sense of the word. He has displayed no ability to outline a topic in a logically structured manner. He displays no talent here for separating a "system" like Christology or Soteriology in a confining border and then dealing with each "subsystem" separately. In this volume Chafer has so intermixed other "subsystems" of information that he did not include any "Soteriology" at all. Chapter 2 exemplifies this blunder. It should be in his Christology.

Stepping thus away from the subject of Soteriology to critique what Dr. Chafer calls "The Person of the Saviour" we can only establish his purpose late in this chapter. It is not in his verbose introduction, but

in his third section, with the catchy title “The Sonships of Christ”, his lead sentence intimates this purpose. “As a further step in the general investigation into who the Saviour is...” Upon discovering this purpose, twenty pages into the chapter, it was disturbing to find only three marginal notes that this author had scratched into the margins of Chafer's twenty pages. They were (1) “Not on topic, (2) “trite play on words” and (3) “Bla,Bla,Bla.” This was disturbing because on the topic “general investigation of who the Saviour is,” nothing whatsoever should be labeled “Bla.” And yet, there you have it Despite a noble effort to pull out a specific sentence that illustrates Chafer's profundity of wordiness in capturing bla,bla,bla. All examples examined were, well, excuse the pun, rather bla.

Dr. Chafer herein again demonstrates a propensity for verbose, passive, run on sentences, but struggling to look past this communication flaw, struggling to come up with the gist of what he may be driving at, the total bankruptcy of Evangelical Theology is all the more manifest. This founder of Dallas Theological Seminary broke from the Fundamentalist concept of Separation and waded right into the middle of 70 plus denominations. There he worded and worded and

worded 8 volumes that captured what all 70 believed. He worded and worded and worded to ensure not one old bird got their feathers ruffled. He worded and worded and worded some more, until precious few could even comprehend what his main point was. He mixed in a lot of Greek but no exegesis. In this chapter he had to include the “Hypostatic Union” of Christ to be recognized as “most scholarly.” Eight volumes containing over 2000 pages is labeled as unabridged Systematic Theology. This author calls it very wordy, passively written, tip-toeing. It is truly awful.

Critique of Chafer's Vol. III Soteriology Chap. III - VII

For all that has been covered in this critique of Dr. Chafer's Soteriology, most has thus far centered on his total lack of content. He has manifest the total bankrupt condition of the Neo–Evangelical movement concerning the subject of So – Great -Salvation. In these next chapters, however, Chafer leaves off his demonstration of bankruptcy and goes headlong out avenues of spurious error.

The Roman Catholic basis of Soteriology can be framed in suffering. Your sin is only purged, and your own righteousness is only secured in penance and in suffering. They allege that their Latin Vulgate Bible, the corrupted Latin translation from the 4th century, states their concept clearly, “Except ye 'do penance' ye shall all likewise perish.” If you, with your beads, and penance perhaps suffer enough in this life you go to heaven. If not, you go to purgatory, where you or your loved one may suffer sufficiently to get your soul to heaven.

Jesus' sufferings are our superb example, they say. He attained perfect righteousness because of his great sufferings, they say. If you suffer and sacrament enough in this life you might attain eternal life in heaven, they say. If someone obviously excelled in suffering and

sacrament, excelled by so much that a Roman Pope recognizes the excess, he can declare that person a saint. These declared Roman Catholic Saints surely have some handmade righteousness left over and they may use some of the excess righteousness for your needs if you just pray to them. With that doctrine embedded deep in this author's Italian blood, one can not imagine how quickly or vehemently his blood boils when Dr. Chafer, the neoevangelical theologian, founder of Dallas Theological Seminary, which caters to 70+ denominations, spends 33% of his volume of Soteriology covering the importance of Christ's Sufferings and 0% of the volume talking about justification by faith. When the 70+ denominations broke away from Roman Catholic Soteriology, they did not make a clean break. It is repulsive that Dr. Chafer kept an exaggerated emphasis on the sufferings of Christ in order to appease those denominations which carried that theme from their Roman Catholic heritage. Dr. Chafer's exaggerated, verbose explanations never rebuke the analogy that we must likewise suffer to attain righteousness.

One must ask, why does Chafer fail to speak against this Roman Catholic doctrine about suffering? And one must answer that it is related

to his desire to appeal to 70+ denominations that sprang from the “Holy Roman Church”. Chafer dare not admit that it is an apostate “Holy Roman Church”, and those denominations which carry forth her doctrine are also apostate.

When Dr. Chafer does interweave some remarkable truths about Christ into such a brazen compromise of Soteriology, it is too little too late. His verbose-run on- passive style makes it obvious that one would be far better off reading the book of Hebrews from their Holy Bible and gleaning these truths from God himself. In chapter VII, “Theories False and True of the Value of Christ's Death”, Chafer adds a capstone to his arch of folly. The false concept that the scientific method can be used to determine valid theology seeps from Protestant Systematic Theology books. Here Chafer tries to present 'theories' wherein after much testing and philosophy, the truth may be found. After testing one's hypothesis it becomes a theory, after years of testing and evaluation a theory becomes a law. When in time, no one can debunk or refute the “law”, it is presumed to be the truth. Such a method is fine for Kepler determining the laws of planetary motion, but for Chafer to resort to some listed theories in a scientific method for determining the truths is utter folly.

There is no value in Chafer's theories, when one holds in their lap the inspired, inerrant Word of God. His use of theories only enables Chafer to continue to tip toe in and out of the 70+ denominations he must appease.

Critique of Chafer's Vol. III Soteriology Chap. VIII - XX

As distressing as it is that 33% of Dr. Chafer's Volume on Soteriology rambles on and on about the sufferings of Christ, his dedication of 58% to “The Fact of Divine Election”, makes this volume completely apostate. Divine Election is the king pin of Presbyterian error, the big Kahuna of John Calvin's theological blunder, and the staple for the Roman Catholic's Replacement Theology which John Calvin Reformed into covenant Theology. It is not surprising that a neoevangelical, who refused the turn of the century Fundamentalist position on separation from apostasy and desires to appease 70+denominations gravitating to Dallas Theological Seminary, would herein dedicate over half his volume on Soteriology to “The Fact of Divine Election.” What is surprising is that any Fundamentalist would waste his time reading it and expecting to glean any valuable truth whatsoever. It is even more appalling that a self defined Independent

Fundamental Baptist would give Chafer's work his "Best of Class Award" and ascribe it as "the best pre-millennial Systematic Theology ever published," and then personally add "I consider it the single best Systematic Theology ever written regardless of Theological perspective." Fundamentalism is now visiting the bankruptcy found in Chafer's neoevangelical theology. This authors whole book "The Biblical Doctrine of Election and Predestination¹⁰⁵" might well be repeated here to refute Dr. Chafer's staunch position. Half of the author's Master Thesis entitled "Reformed Theology's Reformations Are Not Producing a Biblical Systematic Theology¹⁰⁶" would equally expose Chafer's error. It will suffice here to explore the a priori, i.e. Presumed without analysis, bias which locks one into Calvinistic error. Chafer puts it this way, "God has by Election chosen Some to Salvation, but not all. This truth, to often resisted for want of an understanding of the nature of God, or of the position He occupies in relation to his Creatures, is reasonable; but it is distinctly revelation.¹⁰⁷" When one is this locked into "The Fact of Divine Election," they will not see another

105 http://www.gsbaptistchurch.com/elect/election_predest_man.pdf

106 http://www.gsbaptistchurch.com/seminary/master_thesis/thesis_reformed.pdf

107 Chafer, Systematic Theology Volume 3, 172

“whosoever will” in God's Holy Scripture. Instead he sees only that individuals were chosen in the Lord (Rom. 16:13), chosen to salvation. (2Thess. 2:13), chosen in Him before the foundation of the World (Eph.1:4); predestined to the adoption of sons (Eph. 1:5), elect according to the foreknowledge of God (1Pet. 1:2), vessels of mercy which He hath before prepared into glory (Rom. 9:23). The fore mentioned books demonstrate how each of these six texts are taken out of context to support the Calvinists presupposition that God elects individual souls for salvation. As Dr. Chafer puts it, “There can be no question raised but that these passages contemplate an act of God by which some are chosen, but not all..... This suggests that predestination points either to election or retribution, and that election can not be understood in any other light.¹⁰⁸” Does it bother anyone that the theologian who can only word theories about Christ's substitutionary death, can accept no questions concerning “The Fact of Divine Election.” It is disconcerting that Dr. Chafer is so emphatically locked in on John Calvin's doctrine of Divine Election and yet so cavalier about Salvation's Doctrine about salvation's conversion, salvation's

108Ibid. 172

Justification, salvation's Quickening, salvation's Indwelling and salvation's Baptism into Christ. This theological blunder is substantial.

Examine, for a moment, the entrapment of John Calvin's Doctrine of Divine Election. According to his preface, Dr. Chafer originally set out to write a systematic theology which documents Biblical dispensational doctrine. Such a dispensational view is in direct contrast to John Calvin's Covenant Theology.

This latter errant theology has its roots in Roman Catholic Replacement Theology, and in both Roman Catholic error and John Calvin's Covenant Theology, Christians are the new elect of God and replace the Jew as God's chosen and Elect. John Calvin read and taught all Scriptures with this dogma firmly embedded in his soul and spirit. Every time he saw the word 'elect', 'chosen', or 'predestinated', there was no other consideration driving his interpretation. John Calvin's preoccupation and predisposition with Rome's Replacement Theology caused his construction of the doctrine of Divine Election. Along comes Dr. Chafer, realizing the Biblical teaching of Dispensational Theology but not having the intestinal fortitude to reject Covenant Theology or Replacement Theology. Ergo Dr. Chafer remains in lock step blindness

with John Calvin's Doctrine of Divine Election. It is a scholarly blindness; it is a majority opinion blindness, which appeals to the 70+ denominations that sprang from Mother Rome; and it is a blindness which causes one to see all Scripture through the fatalistic spectacles of John Calvin. It is a robust entrapment indeed.

Just as one can get a better delineation of Christ from Hebrews, one can get a better delineation of Calvinism from John Calvin. Dr. Lewis Sperry Chafer is very talented with a verbose passive run-on soft shoe. The latter adequately defined as “a speech, explanation, sales pitch, or other set of remarks delivered in a restrained or conciliatory manner in order to persuade, distract, or otherwise influence someone.”¹⁰⁹ This author has always failed at “soft-shoeing”, and consequently holds a low esteem of those who do it well. It is curious, yeah, even disturbing, that Dr. Chafer waxes firm on this “Fact of Divine Election”, yet “soft shoed” on the substitutionary propitiation of Christ's death. The latter just called “theories”, the former called “fact.” It is illuminating, and yet still disturbing, that a verbose neo-evangelical theologian spends well over half his page count of Volume III,

¹⁰⁹www.wiktionary.org/wiki/softshoe accessed 28 March 2014

“SOTERIOLOGY,” on John Calvin's doctrine of Divine Election, and none on God's doctrine of Justification.

Critique of Chafer's Vol. III Soteriology Conclusion

In light of this present distress, it is worthy, at this point in a critique to abandon criticisms of Lewis Sperry Chafer's work and pursue an actual systematic theology about soteriology. This tactic is recommended even for those more interested in John Calvin's errant theology of Divine Election. This author has two books that delineate that error, and they contain no soft-shoe, just a straight forward presentation of the facts. An effective Systematic Theology Volume on So-Great-Salvation might still be written, but it will not be found in any Protestant library, and never found in a neo-evangelical pen. The next section of this critique holds a reasonable draft/beginning-outline for such a worthy endeavor.

Recall from this author's criticisms of previous Systematic Theologies that such must first be “Systematic”. Systematic does not mean thorough nor, as Chafer supposes, unabridged. Chafer, Geisler, even Strong, Hodge, Shedd, and sometimes Thiessen, tried to capture unabridged every thing that man has ever believed about God. Their

definition of “Systematic” treated theology as a science. Theology is revelation. And systematic means having a planned effective strategy for exploring every fiber of that Revelation. A retired Systems Engineer's approach to “Systematic Theology” is far more effective than the theologian who attempts to use the scientific method, with its hypothesis tested into some theory that still needs to be somehow proven.

Systematic has always implied the breaking down of the whole into understandable systems for a more thorough analysis. Dr. Lewis Sperry Chafer epitomizes the building up of hypothesized theory into a voluminous unabridged run-on consideration. Examine briefly a better tack.

Calvinism and Reformed Theology is the Gateway to Diabolical Error

Another response pertinent to this report:

If you will excuse the vulgar vernacular, Calvinism is a “Gateway Drug” to Covenant Theology, and Covenant Theology is the “Home Turf” of the diabolical Replacement Theology. A gateway drug is not glaringly horrid, nor even apparently harmful. Once through the gate, more obnoxious, addictive and

powerful mind altering concoctions are available. And so it goes, Calvinism and TULIPs are portrayed as Biblical and reasonable. Look inside the gate and you see Covenant/Replacement Theology. Be sure that Replacement Theology sprang from the Gates of Hell via the Roman Catholic Church. It declares that Israel and Hebrews are no longer the elect of God, because now the Roman Catholic Church and Christendom are the true Elect of God. The reformers attempted to grasp the truth that salvation is by faith alone, but they would not let go of all the “Mother Church” mentality and doctrine. Reformed Theology is still rampant with Covenant Theology, a Catholic Church, and their Election before the foundation of the world.

John Calvin's 1536 magnum opus, “The Institutes of the Christian Religion¹¹⁰”, the Presbyterian's 1618 Synod of Dort¹¹¹, and Lewis Sperry Chafer's 1948 volume on Soteriology inexplicably tie salvation to election and predestination. The fact is the Holy Bible does not. In the Bible “So Great Salvation” is

¹¹⁰Freely available at <http://www.ccel.org/ccel/calvin/institutes/>

¹¹¹See Darby's extensive development of history in R.L. Dabney “The Five Points of Calvinism”

inexplicably tied to faith in the Lord Jesus Christ, without a breath about election. The Calvinist/Reformed Theology nowhere has a Gospel of Jesus Christ separate from their Doctrine of Election and Predestination. The Holy Bible nowhere has the Gospel of Jesus Christ touching any doctrine of election. Israel was not elect for salvation but for service in God's purposes. In the New Testament economy, souls are not elect for salvation, but saints are elect for service in God's purposes. All Calvinism, all TULIPs no matter what points are ripped out, and all Reformed Theology are laced with enough Bible to deceive and the diabolical purpose is to wedge one away from the true Gospel of the Lord Jesus Christ.

In his article “TULIPs or ROSES” Iain D. Campbell regurgitates the concepts of a leading Reformation scholar, Dr. Timothy George and his book *Theology of the Reformers*. He gives Dr. George's purpose: “He is concerned to bring the mainstream Baptist churches to a deeper appreciation of sovereign grace, but is also concerned to note that we are no longer in the seventeenth century, and therefore that the

conclusions of Dort require reformulation.”¹¹² Reformed Theologians want to infiltrate mainstream Baptist doctrine because its core is the Gospel of the Lord Jesus Christ. Their core is not.

I gave all diligence to write unto you of the common salvation, it was needful for me to write unto you, and exhort you that ye should earnestly contend for the faith which was once delivered unto the saints. For there are certain men crept in unawares, Reformed Theologians, Calvinists, who were before of old ordained to this condemnation, ungodly men, turning the grace of our God into lasciviousness, and denying the only Lord God, and our Lord Jesus Christ.

To read more about the Reformers attack on the Gospel it is highly recommended that you download and read the two books:

The Biblical Doctrine of Election and Predestination By Edward G. Rice Paperback: \$18.95 The Author is a USAF retired systems engineer turned Baptist Preacher who brings a fresh Biblical look at this doctrine and

¹¹²From http://www.opc.org/new_horizons/NH01/07d.html accessed 12 February 2014

all our systematic theology.

Free at

http://www.gsbaptistchurch.com/elect/election_predest_man.pdf

**Reformed Theology's Reformations Are Not Producing a
Biblical Systematic Theology** By Pastor Edward Rice Hardcover: \$24.05

Reformed Augustinian Theology is, as its name so aptly captures, a reformation of bad Augustinian Theology that previously framed up the belief system of Roman Catholic Theology.

Free at

http://www.gsbaptistchurch.com/seminary/master_thesis/thesis_reformed.pdf

Keep up the good fight,

Pastor Ed Rice

Critique of Arthur W. Pink's "Present Day Evangelism"

Arthur Pinks pre 1952 book "Present Day Evangelism"¹¹³

has as its thesis that present day evangelism has overstepped his doctrine of the Sovereignty of God, his doctrine of God's Sovereign Election, his doctrine of the Total Depravity of Man, and his doctrine of Christ's Limited Atonement. (cf pg 20 1. The Grand Design of God.) Pink totally misses God's assertion that

113From <http://www.chapellibrary.org/literature/epub-reader/?fldCode=pdev> accessed 24 Jan 2013

we (born again believers) are the “special and immediate intervention of God” (pg 22) He misses that God's Holy Spirit indwells us, and that God's command to “go into all the world and preach the gospel” is not limited by the Old Testament verse “Not by might, nor by power, but by my spirit, saith the LORD of hosts “ (Zech 4:6)

Pink's contention that the untrained (i.e. non-Clergy) novice witnesses (ch 3 pg 40-42) are mucking up evangelism by believing and repeating Acts 16:31 reveals his true reformed, reformationist heart beat. Only Clergy (and priests?) can interpret these clear gospel Scriptures properly. They must be “weighed, interpreted, and applied in accord with their context, and that calls for prayerful consideration, careful meditation, and prolonged study.”(pg 45) By Clergy? Really? Arthur here contends that only Clergy should be expounding his carefully sculpted Sovereign Grace, and salvation by the election of souls. Pink perceives that the misled “present day evangelists”... “tells his hearers that salvation is by grace and is received as a free gift, that Christ has done everything for the sinner, and that

nothing remains but for him to 'believe', to trust in the infinite merits of His blood. “ For Arthur Pink this is cardinal error, and this simple gospel message is strongly contested by this staunchly Calvinist, Puritan, Covenant Theologian who calls Dispensationalism “modern pernicious error.”

Pink accuses that such a simple gospel message is tarnishing the holiness and sovereignty of God. Although Dr. Pink brings to bear a needed emphasis on repentance and the Lordship of Christ, his staunch rejection is that people, possibly people not even chosen before the foundation of the world, are being told to “receive Christ as personal Saviour”, and this reacts negatively to all that Arthur Pink holds dear in his misguided Covenant Theology. Curious book. Curious entrapment to Reformed Theology's errors. Incidentally, rat poison is 99% good stuff.

Soteriology Conclusion

Part 08 Soteriology

Bibliography

The Holy Bible

Bancroft, Emery H., *Elemental Theology*, 1932, Baptist Bible Seminary, 1945, 1960, Zondervan 1977, [In 1932 Emery H. Bancroft became the first Dean of Baptist Bible Seminary, Johnson City, NY and published his text for his course *Elemental Theology*. In 1968 the Seminary relocated to Clark Summit PA. In 1970 this author attended Practical Bible Training School on the Johnson City campus and studied Bancroft's text. In 1999 – 2000 this author attended Baptist Bible Seminary to take Greek (NT502 and NT503) via a 3 hour commute from Hammondsport NY to Clark Summit PA, and was reintroduced to Bancroft's exceptional work.]

Cambron, Mark G. *Bible Doctrines*. Grand Rapids, Michigan, Zondervan Publishing House, 1954, [Independent Baptist, Professor, Tennessee Temple Bible School, 1954].

Carroll, James Milton, *The Trail of Blood*, 1932, open source, public domain, from <https://archive.org/details/TheTrailOfBlood>.

Chafer, Lewis Sperry. *Systematic Theology*. Dallas Seminary Press, 1948.[Lewis Sperry Chafer was an American theologian. He founded and served as the first president of Dallas Theological Seminary, and was an influential founding member of modern Christian Dispensationalism. Born: February 27, 1871, Rock Creek, Died: August 22, 1952, Seattle, Education: Oberlin College, Wheaton College. For my Doctorate of Philosophy in Theological Studies through LBTS, I was tasked to analyze all six volumes of his Systematic Theology]

Bibliography

Satan, 1909, Free ebooks - Project Gutenberg, 2004,
<http://www.gutenberg.org> accessed 06/01/2013

Christian, John T., *A History of the Baptists*, Vol 1&2, The Baptist Bible Institute, New Orleans, Louisiana, first published in 1922, public domain, soft copy

[http://www.pbministries.org/History/John T. Christian/vol1/](http://www.pbministries.org/History/John%20T.%20Christian/vol1/)
or

<http://www.reformedreader.org/history/christian/ahob1/ahobp.htm>.

Dollar, George W., *A History of Fundamentalism in America*, Bob Jones University Press, 1973.

Erickson, Millard J. *Christian Theology*. Baker Books, Grand Rapids, MI, 1985.

Finney, Charles G., *Power from On High*, Christian Literature Crusade, public domain, from

<http://www.ccel.org/ccel/finney/power.html>

Gausson, L., *Theopneustia – The plenary Inspiration of The Holy Scriptures deduced from Internal Evidence, and the Testimonies of Nature, History and Science*, David Scott's translation, Chicago, The Bible Institute Colportage ASS'N., 1840.

Geisler, Norman L, *Systematic Theology in One Volume*, Bethany House, 2002, 3, 4, 5, 11 [Geisler, also a neoevangelical, sharply contrasts with Lewis Sperry Chafer in that Geisler 1) admits what he is, neoevangelical, 2) admits what he is attempting, a compilation of evangelical theologies, 3) shows superb organization and structure of thought, 4) contains depth, and 5) is a masterful communicator. This author cannot endorse all that Geisler believes to be true, but can endorse that he seems to capture all that has been believed by conservative evangelicals.]

Hodge, Charles, *Systematic Theology: Volume I-IV*, Charles Scribner & Company, 1871, Hardback- Grand Rapids, Mich., Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1940, Christian Classics Ethereal Library, <http://www.ccel.org>, public domain. [The Internet Archive www.archive.org/details/systematictheolo01hodg], [Charles Hodge, 1797-1878, Presbyterian Minister, Princeton Theologian].

Larkin, Clarence. *The Spirit World*, Published by the Clarence Larkin Estate, 1921, Cosimo, 2005

Miley, John, *Systematic Theology* Vol. 1 & 2, The Library of Biblical and Theological Literature, New York: Eaton and Mains, 1894, The Internet Archive <http://www.archive.org/details/systematictheolo01mile>, [John Miley (1813-1895, Methodist Theologian)].

Rice, Edward G., *The 357 Magnum Errors of the Modernist's Critical Texts*, Public Domain, <http://www.gsbaptistchurch.com/baptist/bible/texterror.pdf>, <http://www.lulu.com/shop/pastor-edward-rice/the-357-magnum-errors-of-modernists-critical-texts/paperback/product-5586759.html>

Ryrie, Charles C., *Basic Theology*. Victor Books, Wheaton, Illinois, 1981.

Schaff, Philip. *The Creeds of Christendom*. Three volumes, 1877, reprint, Grand Rapids, MI: Baker Book House, 1977.

----- . *History of the Christian Church*. Third edition, revised in eight volumes, Grand Rapids, MI: Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Company, 1910.

Schofield, C. I., *Prophecy Made Plain*, Photolithographed by Grand Rapids Book Manufacturers, Grand Rapids, MI, 1967.

Bibliography

Shedd, William G. T., *Dogmatic Theology*, Roosevelt Professor of Systematic Theology in Union Theological Seminary, New York, Charles Scribner & Sons, 1888. [The Internet Archive www.archive.org/details/dogmatictheology01sheduoft], [William G.T. Shedd, 1820-1894, Old School Presbyterian & Reformed Theologian].

----- Calvinism: Pure and Mixed, A Defense of the Westminster Standards. 1893, reprint, Edinburgh, UK: The Banner of Truth Trust, 1986.

----- Commentary on Romans. 1879, reprint, Grand Rapids, MI: Baker Book House, 1980.

Strong, Augustus H., *Systematic Theology: Three Volumes in 1*, Philadelphia, Valley Forge PA, The Judson Press, 1907, 35th printing 1993. [Augustus H. Strong, 1836-1921, American Baptist Pastor & Theologian].

Thiessen, Henry Clarence, *Lectures in Systematic Theology*, Grand Rapids, Mich., William B. Eerdmann Publishing Company, 1949. [Henry Clarence Thiessen, ? -1947, President of Los Angeles Baptist Theological Seminary, later renamed John MacArthur's The Master's College].

Lectures in Systematic Theology. Revised by Vernon D. Doerksen, Grand Rapids, Mich., William B. Eerdmann Publishing Company, 2006.

Waite, D.A.. *Defending the King James Bible*. The Bible For Today Press, 1992 & 2002.

Yoho, Walter Allan, *YAHWEH The Greatness of God*, Volume 1 thru 3, FBCPublications.com, 2010. [Dr. Yoho teaches theology at Tabernacle Baptist Theological Seminary 717 Whitehurst Landing Rd. Virginia Beach VA 23464 under Pastor. James Baker. We met after our military-hop to Norfolk VA on our

return from Mazara Del Vallo, Italy in May 2016. I have been enthralled with his three volumes of theology since that meeting.]